

Fallen Hero Translation chapter 1



luxiufer.livejournal.com/33728.html

Ahem, sorry for the delay....

Get ready on your seat, fasten your seatbelt, Let's start our rollercoaster ride..... XD

Fallen Hero Book 1 – The Love of the Fallen Hero

Fallen Hero Chapter 1



The sky on the summer's night was a layer of pleasant dark blue.

The moon tonight was extremely bright and clear, making all the scenery around the mountain all clear and distinguishable. The warm water in the pond in the depths of a grand mountain which was inhabited by human was raising its natural mist in spirals, floating and fluttering under the moonlight, seemingly it was trying to seduce and lure the heavenly fairy to come and visit the scenic beautiful place in the human realm.

From far away, the strong wind like horse's hoofs sound could be heard. The continuous gallops broke the deep remote mountain's tranquility. The hooves galloping sound gradually came closer and closer. Finally, it made its stop by the pond.

"Cong Yun, I will go and soak in the water for a while. You go and find a place to rest by yourself. Don't go too far away." The deep and low voice of the male had a warm tone to it. The partner he was talking to was a lively fine black steed.

That black steed was nodding its head, as if could understand the human language. Then turned around, with a light gallop it entered the forest, leaving the man on his own by the pond side.

The man squatted down his body, stretching out his hand to touch the limpid and clear water of the pond. The water's mild temperature made a threadlike smile appeared on his face. He gently lifted up a handful of water and sprinkled it on his face, thereupon, he lifted his head with a completely satisfied expression on his face.

Going to the battle ground with the army had already taken more than a month. The troops advanced and entered the battlefield this basically didn't let him have much leisure in bathing, however, his love of cleanliness nature made him conscious about his outward appearance, so, upon noticing a place with a hot spring, when the night fell, he couldn't restrain himself from quickly rushing to this place to immerse himself in a comfortable bath.

The distant from this place to Pingnan's troops' camping ground was about two Li ^[1]. Across from this place, on the base of Mount Pan Long*, was where the enemy's troops were stationed. But because he had been enduring for almost a month this kind of dirty lifestyle, even if he had to face the danger of being captured alive by the enemy troops, this threat also couldn't obstruct his determination.

He took off his clothing and other personal items then tossed them on a rock by the shore, the man was certain that this place was surely without another person's existence. Freely untied his scarf headband, he jumped into the middle of the pond. In an instant, the feeling of being surrounded by the warm water of the pond made him unable to restrain a mouthful of chaotic air escaping from his chest.

This era was when the Datong Dynasty had been ruling for almost five hundred years. The glorious and flourishing golden age from four hundred years of this Imperial Dynasty was already hard to keep up. The fatuousness of the current power holder immediately brought about the lie waste of livelihood of the people. The heroes in times of disorder, one after another, were starting their rebellious uprising, fighting to vie for supremacy and to take over the

vast length and breadth of the Central Mainland.

The Pingnan troops, among these many voluntary armies, were the latest to be established. Yet, because of the leader, Ouyang Fa De, the Provincial Governor of Jiangnan, at the right time and in the right place, for less than three years, he already gloriously occupied a large area within Jiangnan's border. Also, recently he had taken a place of strategic importance into this area, making him even more the focus of people's attention.

The man who was bathing in the middle of the pond was called Duan Shun Jie. His master, the Lord of Zhongnan, Guo Yue and Ouyang Fa De were brothers who learnt from the same master. Living in seclusion for many years, upon receiving a letter that requested him out from the mountain by his junior, Guo Yue decreed an order, to let his most favorite subordinate and disciple, Duan Shun Jie, to enlist in Pingnan's battalion. Since then, more than a year had passed.

Ouyang Fa De towards this wise and resourceful as well as brave and fiercely skillful in battle Duan Shun Jie appropriately put him in an important position. Duan Shun Jie also didn't waste his expectation, again and again he showed him his outstanding merit. Recently, he forced the famous General of Datong who attacked Jin Ling, the Duke of Zheng, Huo Yan, to retreat. Once again he exhibited his rare talent in military.

As the proverb says, 'Persons with mediocre ability wouldn't attract jealousy'. Duan Shun Jie, continuously established his military merit, inviting both envy and jealousy, thus he had been pushed aside from Ouyang Fa De inner circle. More than once he had been humiliated in the presence of all. Although Duan Shun Jie had no intention to reach wealth and rank, eventually, to be provoked by the vile characters, he also would be troubled.

Tonight, using the bathing in the warm water as his pretext, he also conveniently let himself relax for a while from this kind of situation.

In such nights when the clouds were light and the air was clear, the reflection of the moon was scattered on the pond, Duan Shun Jie was swimming alone in the mountain's water. His heart and mind were delightedly satisfied, definitely couldn't be described by all words or writings.

Indulging himself in a good swim for more than an hour, even though he still wished to continue, yet, the distant from this place to the enemy camp was extremely near after all, it was hard to avoid that he would have a shred of worry in his heart. So, he turned his body to swim back to the shore, to get ready to put on his clothes and go back to his camp.

Upon turning his body, he was terribly shocked to realize that on the shore, since he didn't know when, there stood someone in white clothes. Looking from a far distance, that person had jet black hair and skin the color of the snow. The figure was elegant. That was actually a woman of an unexceptional beauty.

That beautiful woman's expression was rigid, her pair of winter night like pupils were staring at his body without blinking. Who knew how long she had been staring for.

The first thought in Duan Shun Jie's mind was a ghost of a beautiful woman appeared. But that woman's feet were evidently showing her tall and graceful figure. He pulled himself together, looks like that person was the same as himself, in the midnight coming to this uninhabited warm pond to have a bath.

After looking back at her in a daze for quite some time, only then did Duan Shun Jie realized his still bare naked body. He couldn't help but be embarrassed. In an instant, a crimson color rose up on his face. Pulling himself back into the water, only his head was showing on the water's surface. Seeing that that woman was still standing there silently, without the slightest means of leaving yet, he finally couldn't hold it: "Miss, can you face the other side, after I put on my clothes, I will leave."

That woman was obviously astonished and dumbstruck. Duan Shun Jie was worried that she couldn't clearly hear

his words, so he shouted again: “Miss.....”

“What did you call me?” That person in white raised one of the brows, looking at him with a whole face filled with an astonishment look, “What Miss?! Who did you call Miss?!” The clear voice was deep and low, completely without any trace of the gentle and demure voice of a woman, obviously it belonged to a man.

Duan Shun Jie almost wanted to dig a hole and bury himself in there out of embarrassment. Dumfounded for quite some time, he finally regained his senses and apologized: “Brother, I am truly sorry, I didn’t have a clear look, I thought you were a girl, I am very sorry. Please forgive me!”

He had an outspoken and straightforward nature, once he realized he was in the wrong, he would apologize at once. Definitely he would not because of treasuring his prestige refuse to admit his mistake.

The person in white laughed, “Your eyes are no good. But you are humble and unpretentious.” The rigid expression on his face was softened. Under the moonlight, his face appeared all the more like a dawn on the spring, elegant as if unworldly.

This person’s face was good looking in such a way, it’s a pity that he was a man, if he was a woman, truly he wouldn’t know how many men would go crazy and topple.

The Lord of Zhongnan had many disciples, each and every one of them were men. The Lord of Pingnan also wouldn’t have woman at their campsite. Duan Shun Jie grew up in his twenty-four years of life, meeting many men, even he himself had lost count, yet, there was not even a single one who had the same beauty as the man in white in front of his eyes now. He even suspected that he had met a celestial being who presented himself in this world.

“Isn’t the water supposed to be very cold?”

The man in white squatted on his heel, stretching out his hand into the water. ---Even though this was merely a simple motion to feel out the warm water, still, what he had done was extremely graceful and pleasant to the eyes.

Since he had known that the person in front of him was of the same gender, Duan Shun Jie of course wouldn’t have the same amount of nervousness. Looking at the man in whites’ eager to have a try expression, he had this joyous feeling that he had come across a kindred spirit who shared the same interest with him.

“Brother, do you also want to come into the water? The water has a mild warmness, come and have fun by swimming comfortably in this summer night.” His manner of speaking carried a tone of unconscious sense of pride. It was as if this pond was owned by his family.

The man in white was smiling while nodding his head, untying his outer garment and threw it on the rock. Duan Shun Jie could see that the outer garment of his clothing was made of an excellent material. On the corner of the clothes, there was a vivid and lifelike embroidery of a unicorn pattern. Obviously, he was born in a powerful and wealthy household. Absolutely not even near to a farmer or woodman’s class.

The man was taking off his clothing and in a quick pace he tossed it, then slowly he walked to the water. His skin was pure white as the snow, however, contrary to his outward slender and delicate looking appearance, his body was considerably masculine with muscle to certain extent. --- To think that just now he actually took him as a woman, Duan Shun Jie couldn’t help but laugh at himself for having such poor sight.

“Brother, what is your name?” Duan Shun Jie was born with this frank and open personality, for two strangers to remain silent while sharing a bath was not exactly the thing he would like to have, of course he would try to find some topics to hold a conversation.

“My surname is Yan, Yan Xi Cheng.” The man in white’s deep and low voice had a kind of ambiguous tone. His face didn’t show a unhappy expression.

Knowing that the man in front of him didn't really loath him, Duan Shun Jie had even more desire to make him as his friend. "My surname is Duan, given name is Shun Jie. Brother Yan, is your house nearby or you by chance passing by this place?"

As if taken by surprise by this Duan Shun Jie who had a heroic spirit appearance, yet actually could be counted as a busybody, Yan Xi Cheng paused for a while before answering: "My house is nearby. However, it was not until yesterday I accidentally found out that this place has a pond. Tonight is unbearably hot, so I came here to give it a try."

"I also just found out about this pond today. In this very hot weather, without a place to have a bath, really will make people stink to death. It is very good that I can find this place." Duan Shun Jie had been pushed aside by Ouyang Fa De's inner circle, naturally the other Generals from the Pingnan's army wouldn't dare to form a deep friendship with him; his subordinates and soldiers were respecting him like worshiping a God, all the more unwilling to accompany him to have an idle chat. The straight and lively Duan Shun Jie almost died from boredom in the military camp. For him to be able to find someone to hold a conversation with, he immediately dispelled his initial idea to quickly return to his camp. Determined to stay and soak in the pond for some more time.

Too bad, Yan Xi Cheng wasn't like him who loved to talk at all. Most of the time, he only smiled while listening to Duan Shun Jie's babble to him, once in a while, he would say a word or two to reply. --- Although it was like this, Duan Shun Jie felt it was considerably satisfying enough.

"Brother Yan, have you ever been to Tong'an? They said that the girls in the brothel, compared to the girls in the Imperial Palace, are much more beautiful, is that true?" After boasting about the beautiful scenery in the Zhongnan's mountain, Duan Shun Jie started to make a discreet inquiry about the beautiful prostitutes in the Capital.

Yan Xi Cheng probably had never run into such an overly familiar person, he seemed to be a little awkward coping with this person.

"I have been to Tong'an. Regarding the brothel, I have only ever seen the girls from Tonghua House... yet, I don't feel that they are especially beautiful." He loosened down his hat, scooping up the water to rinse his pitch black as the dark night long hair on his head. The beautiful face was revealing a slightly perplexed expression. --- If one overlooked his flat chest, truly he was like a beautiful woman painted on the spring festival's picture.

"Is that so? But I heard that Tonghua House is Tong'an's number one brothel." Duan Shun Jie and his fellow apprentices were strictly prohibited by their Master to step foot in the red light district, therefore, they only could rely on the secret rumor to satisfy their craving. So, whenever they heard the other brothers brag about how beautiful the girls in Tong'an were, he and the rest of the brothers would crave for more as if drooling. Now, hearing Yan Xi Cheng say that the girls in Tonghua House were not that extraordinary, how could he not lose all of his hope?!

Yan Xi Cheng saw that Duan Shun Jie was obviously disappointed, he couldn't help but laugh involuntarily: "Brother Duan hasn't married yet?" He almost added "no wonder, your whole face was filled with unsatisfied desire" in his words.

"Brother Yan already has a beloved wife?" The Lord of Zhongnan himself had vowed a life of solitary, wouldn't take a wife for all his life, of course he wouldn't let him nor his brothers to find a wife. Also after arriving at Ouyang Fa De's place, there was no one who was concerned about this kind of matter until today, Duan Shun Jie was still an unmarried man. Every time he thought about it, this matter caused him to have a distressed heart.

Yan Xi Cheng quietly shook his head.

Duan Shun Jie immediately beamed with happiness and went to him: "Brother Yan actually is a fellow suffer regarding love misery. Don't worry! Don't worry! To think a real man like you and me would be troubled over this wifeless thing. Deal with this some other time, after we have succeeded and gained recognition, no more worry of

not having a beloved wife in our arms.” He was saying this while disorderly patting the shoulder of Yan Xi Cheng. His whole face’s gesture was like a man who had come down from the end of the world.

In Duan Shun Jie’s opinion, after he said this kind of talk, Yan Xi Cheng should be showing the same feeling as him. So he lightly wished for him with the wishes that he would meet a pretty girl soon, and so on and so on. However, Yan Xi Cheng only used his pair of pitch black gentle pupils to look at him, whole face was of a smile, yet not a smile expression.

Despite that, Duan Shun Jie had a magnanimous temper as well as being broad-minded, he also couldn’t stand this kind of high and mighty attitude of Yan Xi Cheng. Like a drain of gas rubber ball, he took down his hand which was initially on Yan Xi Cheng’s shoulder. Embarrassedly said: “Brother Yan, you feel that I am somewhat too deep in conversation while I am a mere stranger, have I offended you?”

Yan Xi Cheng upon hearing what he had said was unable to hold back his laughter. He was such a beautiful person, with this kind of laugh, he appeared to be even more gorgeous without comparison. Looking at Duan Shun Jie open his mouth widely like an idiot, even the annoyed feeling in his chest had been forgotten.

“Brother Duan, you have misunderstood!” Yan Xi Cheng was trying hard to stop his laughter, speaking with a straightened face, “Little Brother here never encountered a man as straightforward as Brother Duan before, for a while, I didn’t know how to react properly. Definitely without the meaning of whatever Brother Duan had said. In case my manner had led Brother Duan to misunderstand, here, I will say that it is nothing like that to compensate for the earlier blame.”

His attitude was natural and unrestrained, and appeared to be extremely sincere. Duan Shun Jie of course wouldn’t keep any unpleasant feelings, he laughed at once: “Since it is like that, I can be at ease. To meet with Brother Yan in this place also could be counted as being brought together by luck. I hope in the future I still can have a chat with Brother Yan like this.”

For one who had a thing for beauty, he sincerely wished for it --- If this Yan Xi Cheng was a dark coated with rough black skin big build man, perhaps Duan Shun Jie wouldn’t be as friendly and eagerly wanted to make him his friend. However, Yan Xi Cheng was born with such grandeur beauty, making him inevitably have this thought to be on good terms with him.

“Of course. But Brother Duan estranged himself this way, always called me ‘Brother Yan’, ‘Brother Yan’, making it harder for me to approach even though I wanted to have a closer feeling.” Despite speaking only a little, obviously Yan Xi Cheng was extremely skilled in literature. With merely two to three words, he already could coax Duan Shun Jie to burst out in laughter, almost bursting out his heart and lungs altogether in less than three seconds.

“Then, I will not be modest anymore. Xi...Xi Cheng.” Obviously the person in front of him was a man, Duan Shun Jie still couldn’t help being embarrassed and flustered.

“Shun Jie.” Yan Xi Cheng responded with a smiling face. Nobody could guess what was hidden behind his smiling face.

The two people were soaking in the pond while chatting for a little while more. Until the sky was slightly bright, Duan Shun Jie suddenly cried out as if awakened from a dream.

“Ai ya!! How come it is already daybreak? Who would have thought that we would hit it off, talked until we had forgotten the time. Sorry, sorry!! I still have some matters to attend to this morning, I have to take my leave first.”

He dashed to the shore like his buttocks were burnt, randomly grabbed some clothes to wipe the drops of water on his body, in a very fast movement he put on his clothes. Turning his head, he saw that Yan Xi Cheng silently stood in the water, looking at him with a slight smile.

"Xi Cheng, will you come again tomorrow night?" Unable to restrain himself, he ran back to the shore, asking the good friend he made just now with his reluctant to part expression.

"You didn't sleep tonight, just go and catch up on sleep. If you want to meet, the day after tomorrow, sometime after nine, I will wait for you here. I will not leave before we see each other!" Yan Xi Cheng's words were clearly exquisite and showing consideration to some extent, as if he could be classified as a whole different category from Duan Shun Jie.

"Then, no leaving before seeing me!" Duan Shun Jie made a foolish 'he he' laugh.

Waving his hand at Yan Xi Cheng, he made a whistling sound. Cong Yun came out galloping from the forest. Duan Shun Jie flew to ride on the horse, just before he left, he still didn't forget to turn his rein and threw Yan Xi Cheng his final glance, afterwards, he urged his horse and left.

Looking at the fading figure of Duan Shun Jie, the smile on Yan Xi Cheng's eyes slowly dissipated, returned to its original cold and stoic expression. Soon afterwards, he swiftly got on the shore to wear his clothes. After tidying himself in his neat clothing, didn't know how he posed himself, in a quick and unseen movement, his whole person already soared high up in the sky. After repeatedly rising and falling amongst the thicket, he disappeared in the direction opposite to Duan Shun Jie.

Although Panlong Mountain topography was dangerously steep, however, for martial artists, running in this kind of place was similar to running on a flat ground. In the night sky, Yan Xi Cheng's white garment was fluttering, flying in the air like the wind. As the same amount of time needed to gulp down a small cup of tea, the Datong's military camp which was located on the other side of the mountain already could be seen in front of his eyes.

At this dawn time, there were already some soldiers who were on early morning duty lighting the fire to cook the food at the campsite. Yan Xi Cheng's figure didn't decelerate, passing through just like that. His speed was extremely fast, exactly at that time the soldiers lifted their heads when they felt a gust of wind sweep over their heads, there wasn't any trace of him already.

Yan Xi Cheng stopped in front of a big tent in the center of the campsite, raising the curtain, he casually stepped in. A young boy dressed like a servant, upon seeing him, stepped up and happily greeted him. Bowing while saying : "Your Highness, General Pei very early in the morning had come to ask an audience with you. I told him that you went to bed late in the night therefore hasn't got up yet as an excuse. He told me to notify him once you have awakened."

Yan Xi Cheng knitted his brows into a frown, with a distinct unhappy face said: "Why is he being so anxious? An De, you help me to change my clothes first. Let him wait a little bit longer."

An De busily took off his clothes. In the tent, there were another two young page boys who held the clothing by the side and helped him to dress up.

After being busily changed, Yan Xi Cheng could no longer be recognized as the same white shirt scholar appearance a short while ago. --- On his body, layer upon layer were clothes embroidered with exquisite patterns of the glorious Imperial family's emblem piled up. Also, the golden crown on his head in accordance to his cold noble expression was manifesting his honorable status as one of the people of the Imperial lineage.

"Go and call far Pei Jin Tian." He ordered An De.

An De respectfully received the order and left. Very soon, he returned with a Great General whose whole body was in martial military attire following at his back.

"Your Highness." Even though a courtesy between a ruler and his minister was unnecessary in the military, yet, Pei

Jin Tian still respectfully bowed his body to pay his respect when he saw Yan Xi Cheng.

“What’s the matter? Why do you want to have an audience with me?” Yan Xi Cheng was showing his displeased place. Nobody would have seen a trace of that a short while ago when he was still soaking in the warm pond and laughingly chatted with Duan Shun Jie’s ; of course, if Duan Shun Jie saw Yan Xi Cheng at this moment, he absolutely wouldn’t dare to pat his shoulder or touch his chest, or to call each other with intimate terms.

“Your Highness, regarding the letter our side sent several days ago to Ouyang Fa De asking them to retreat, they have sent their reply.” Pei Jin Tian in a completely respectful way held a letter in both his hands and showed it to him.

“What did it say?” Yan Xi Cheng didn’t even take the letter from him, instead, he straightforwardly asked about the content.

“Will not retreat.” Pei Jin Tian also gave him a brief answer.

Yan Xi Cheng laughed. His beautiful eyes glittered like the light reflected on the snow: “That ignorant oldman!! I have known that he wouldn’t retreat so willingly. Since our side has completed our military preparations now, even if he said he wanted to retreat, I would never let him off so easily.”

“Exactly. Ouyang Fa De failed to predict that Your Highness the Seventh Prince personally lead the army on this battle. Your Highness the Seventh Prince has the most wonderful foresight as well as accurate calculation regarding military strategy. Not to mention only one Ouyang Fa De, even if he had ten Ouyang Fa De around, he already couldn’t defend and turn around the situation.”

Pei Jin Tian originally was Datong’s most well-known, for he strived for fame as a General. The person who could make him earnestly bow down to and speak highly of, in this whole world, could be said as only one person --- that is the current Seventh Prince, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, also known as Yan Xi Cheng.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was bestowed with extraordinary innate skill. Outstandingly excelled at military strategy and was distinguishably good at the art of war. Though the ruling Emperor was foolish, towards this particular son of his, he actually regarded him with an extremely important position; making him the mastermind and relying on his behind the scene advise, every time the volunteer army tried to rebel, they could crush them completely. It could be said that it was all thanks to him that the Xuan Yuan dynasty could preserve their world domination until today. Mainly because of this, even though the Crown Prince was offended by his noticeable military merit, also wouldn’t dare to harm even the tiniest bit of his hair.

Yan Xi Cheng, no, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng listened to Pei Jin Tian praising him to such extent, his expression remained unmoved, still the same rigid and cold face as before. Throwing Pei Jin Tian a glance, with a considerably rude manner he asked: “So, just because of this small nonsense matter you came to find me so early in the morning?”

Pei Jin Tian’s face turned white at once. After struggling for quite some time, he finally opened his mouth: “Actually.... Actually it was about our side having intercepted the Pingnan’s army provisions’ problem..... The problem is.....” He said half of the problem then didn’t dare to speak any further, there was only his cold sweat that could be seen rolling down all along his forehead.

Upon seeing the state he was in, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng creased his brows, then spoke in a stern voice: “If you want to say something just properly say it, what’s that muttering and mumbling for? Be specific!!”

Pei Jin Tian didn’t dare to ignore his order, busily told the matters by fives and tens ^[2]. It seemed like last night he received some intelligence from their spy, saying that the nearest Pingnan army would transport their provision through the south. He dispatched a couple of troops to lay an ambush on the only mountain passage. But who would have thought, not only the provision army didn’t pass by, but when the soldiers were about to return to their

campsite, they were ambushed instead, resulting in heavy casualties, which greatly affected and discouraged the morale of the soldiers.

“Who told you dispatch the troops to the ambush?” After hearing the complete story, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng twisted his brows.

“I.... I thought this was only a small matter, therefore....therefore I didn’t report to Your Highness, and made an unauthorized decision.....” Of course Pei Jin Tian wouldn’t dare to say that he craved for greatness and success, thinking that after being successful with the surprise attack, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng would see him in a new light and esteem his progress. But resulting in this unexpected damage, he actually lost several hundred soldiers. Seeing that he couldn’t hide the truth, he had to admit his guilt first and to accept his punishment.

“Who is the enemy’s commanding General now?” Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng unexpectedly didn’t pursue the matter any longer, also, he changed the topic of the conversation.

“Report Your Highness, It is someone who is called Shun. This person joined the Pingnan troops several years ago. In only a short while after he enlisted, he rose and was promoted as the supreme commander. They say that this person is commanding the soldiers like a God, thus our army has been greatly troubled by him.”

“Shun.... Is it?” Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng narrowed his eyes, slowly, he recited that name out loud. A glint of light flashed through the narrow slit of his narrowed eyes. Pei Jin Tian knew that every time Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng displayed this kind of expression, it meant that someone would meet with his greatest unfortunate fate. He couldn’t help but consider himself lucky that his anger wasn’t really directed at him.

“Your Highness, Your subject would have to excuse himself first.” Now that he already examined his mistakes, Pei Jin Tian of course wanted to slip away as soon as possible.

“You may leave.” Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng seemingly immersed in his own train of thoughts, he only waved his hand to let him leave.

Pei Jin Tian was on his way to go out while considering himself fortunate, but suddenly, he was called back by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng: “Oh!! I almost forgot! --- Go to official Xing to get twenty whips from the troops as your punishment, for deciding without authority, and to cause the wavered morale of the soldiers just before battle.” He spoke in such a casual way, as if getting twenty whips from the troops was not a serious punishment at all.

Upon hearing this, Pei Jin Tian’s both feet felt weak at once, with a “thump” noise he knelt down on the ground.

“Your Highness. Please be merciful Your Highness!! If it is twenty whips, Your Subject wouldn’t be able to walk at the very least for a full month!” Unable to walk was actually only a small matter, as the Great General, even before going to the battlefield, he was already knocked out by his own soldiers. How could he maintain his dignified face in front of his troops now?

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn’t the least bit care about him. He only minded to enter the inner bedroom to catch up on his sleep. His cold-blooded and cold-hearted attitude once again appeared on his beautiful face. Exactly because of this reason he was known as “The Cruel Prince”.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 1.

Notes :

*Mount Pan Long, Literally means : Coiled Dragon Mountain. But I leave the name of places as the Chinese name.

[1] The li (里, lǐ) is a traditional Chinese unit of distance, which has varied considerably over time but now has a

standardized length of 500 metres (1,640 feet) or half a kilometer. A modern li consists of 1,500 Chinese "feet" or chi and, in the past, was often translated as a "mile." Since the li has generally been only about a third as long as the mile, translating the character as "Chinese mile" or simply "li" is much less likely to produce confusion or error.

[2] Count by fives and tens : to narrate systematically and in full detail.)

For Xi Cheng's name :

At first, he used : 言西城 (Yan Xi Cheng) And for his original name : 軒轅西城 (Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng) but later change to 軒轅熙誠 (Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng) , the reading is not changed, but the name slightly changed. But I think it is fine. LOL.... XD

Fallen Hero Translation chapter 2



luxiufer.livejournal.com/34242.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 2



"There is still no movement?" Duan Shun Jie threw his gaze at the gradually becoming dusky colored sky, then once again looking at the standing on the outside of the tent guard who was on the keep watch duty.

"Nothing. The Datong army is not making any moves at all." The answer from the guard was still the same as before without even the slightest change.

Although the answer didn't come as a surprise, Duan Shun Jie still couldn't help but show a disappointed face because of the expected answer.

Pei Jin Tian, you hold back the troops without moving¹, are you preparing to launch your attack in a certain way?

The Pingnan troops had completed all the preparations to meet the enemy head on. No matter what kind of attack, whether it was an open direct attack or a sudden surprise attack, he already had his plan set for it. Yet, the refuse to surrender letter that he had sent was like a stone which fell into the deep ocean, without any reply, it also didn't incite any kind of response.

Looking at the gradually becoming dark sky, Duan Shun Jie had a premonition that today also would be spent in vain. --- It was not like he was such a fool to the point that he wouldn't be prepared for the enemy's surprise attack at night, the campsite of the Pingnan's troops was surrounded by mountains on three sides, though, all four sides were surrounded by numerous streams and dangerous slopes, if Datong's army was thinking to do their nightly surprise attack on such a moonless night, it would be the same as to follow the path to their own doom².

But tonight... Duan Shun Jie raised his head to face the sky that had been covered by a layer of darkness, tonight was completely moonless as well as a windless and suffocating summer night.

"Have the people who lie in ambush to withdraw." With a deepened voice, he issued an order.

"General ..." The Second-in-Command by his side was revealing an anxious expression, however, Duan Shun Jie firmly insisted by nodding his head and straightly told him that tonight Datong's army wouldn't make any movement too.

"Chang Er, tell the people in kitchen to send my meal to my tent." Ignoring the still had something to say Second-in-Command, Duan Shun Jie already turned his body and walked out of the tent, while walking he instructed a boy servant who served him as his personal attendant.

Arriving to his own tent, the first thing Duan Shun Jie did was to remove all of the wrap tightly on his body armor and put it down --- even if the armor was a life-saver in certain times, but in this extreme hot and stuffy season, it could cause you death from the stink smell before anything.

Diligently he held in his breath so that he wouldn't smell his own body odor, Duan Shun Jie wrinkled his brows while stripping his outer clothes and rolled them into a bundle, getting them to be washed together when he has his own relaxing bathing time.

Ordinarily, this kind of trivial daily chore should be taken care of by his boy servant, but how unfortunate, Duan Shun Jie had the worlds most unskilled in washing clothes boy servant. When he was at Mount Zhongnan and at the

beginning of entering the Pingnan troops, he managed by himself all of these daily routines. Chang Er was who Ouyang Fa De insisted to be appointed as his attendant several months after he was promoted as the Great General --- he should have firmly declined this offer at that time!

Before he had ruined the third piece, while washing the second piece of underpants that was ruined by Chang Er, Duan Shun Jie almost had to beg him and ensure him that he wouldn't tell anybody else in order to safely snatch back his laundry duty --- for information, at the time when one went on an expedition or to go into battle, every single piece of clothing wouldn't be able to be mended thus this made all clothes as highly valuable belongings!

Hurriedly, he dug into the meal on the table which was brought in by Chang Er, Duan Shun Jie led the tightly tied up at the back of his tent, Cong Yun, to go straight to the warm pond which was located in the depths of the mountain.

The rapid movement of the horse not only rose up a spell of gust and blew dry the sweat on his body caused by the heat, but also lightened up his whole day's tensed nervousness. Thinking that he was about to see Yan Xi Cheng soon, his heart was giving out a childlike excitement at once --- although Yan Xi Cheng was giving people a kind of distance and an unattainable impression, yet his beauty as well as his reservedness as a highly privileged noble caused Duan Shun Jie's heart to yearn for him and looked forward for their meeting, like a magnet that strongly attracted him.

After riding on Cong Yun's back rapidly for quite some time, the warm pond came to his sight. Without the moonlight to illuminate it, the pond looked dark and deep. Windless and tranquil, without any turbulence the surface of the pond made it appear like a mysterious mystical mirror, emitting a hard to describe enchanting feeling.

Releasing the rein on Cong Yun, Duan Shun Jie took the torch that he brought and ignited it before he tied it on a withered tree by the side, he made use of the slight weak light it produced to wash his clothes.

Though it was such a suffocating hot night, facing the layer of serene water surface, his ears also could hear the transmitted insects' song in bits and pieces, Duan Shun Jie's hot and dry mood also gradually calmed down, as if dissolved far and deep into this clear water in the middle of the mountain.

"Night is clear as the water..." He couldn't restrain his thought and with a lowered voice he said it out as if unaware.

"Shun Jie, I never expected that you actually were refined in literature. It is truly unexpected!" Surprisingly, from a place not too far away, a responding voice came through.

"Xi Cheng!" Duan Shun Jie joyously lifted his head, meeting with the sight of the dressed in white Yan Xi Cheng coming out from the dense grass while carrying a lantern as he leisurely moved closer to him. In that pitch black environment, there was only his elegant figure shrouded by a dense light, it was as if a picturesque work of art of a red and green painting had come alive, causing people to be fascinated by him.

"Xi Cheng!" Duan Shun Jie himself was unable to explain the kind of fondness that was bursting out from the depths of his heart. He set aside his half-washed clothes, and quickly welcomed his friend by taking over the lantern in his hand.

"Though I have this frail-looking appearance, it was not like even a lantern I couldn't hold." Even though Yan Xi Cheng was obviously mocking Duan Shun Jie's busybody nature, he still meekly went along with him until the pond's side.

"You wash your clothes yourself?" Upon a glance on the spread out on the rock plain and simple looking clothes, Yan Xi Cheng casually asked.

An adult man washing his own clothes, originally wasn't something to be proud of, however, in front of Yan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie didn't feel like telling any falsehoods, awkwardly he nodded his head while laughing

sheepishly.

Yan Xi Cheng also didn't say anything of the matter, he only cared to lower his head to untie his belt, slowly and deliberately he took off his clothing.

"Ahem ahem... Xi Cheng, is your house nearby? I see that you go out by yourself in such late of night, you must have been familiar with the mountain's passage." Obviously he was a man, yet Duan Shun Jie had difficulty facing the scene of the undressing Yan Xi Cheng, he pretended to resume the washing activity then turned his body to face another side, while still trying to hold a trivial conversation to alleviate his nervous feeling.

"My house is actually on the foot of this mountain. Now this mountain is being used as a battle ground, the mountain bandit who resided on the mountain had run away since long ago." After taking off his clothing, Yan Xi Cheng didn't get into the water, instead, he sat on a lump of big rocks by the pond's side. Loosened up his coiled hair to be washed.

Upon the sight of the fascinating scene of unrolled long and beautiful hair, Duan Shun Jie was fascinated to the point that he didn't continue to wash his clothes anymore, taking off his upper garment, he jumped to the water, swam to the lump of rocks under Yan Xi Cheng's feet and leaned forward, just like that, he watched Yan Xi Cheng washing his hair.

"Xi Cheng, since your house is nearby, may I go to play³?" After watching for a while, Duan Shun Jie conveniently found a subject to converse, when the words had already escaped his mouth was the time he realized that he had been impulsive.

"Okay." Yan Xi Cheng seemingly didn't mind the least bit, he also answered indifferently. "These several months, there was only me that lived in my house, how about you come to accompany me?"

Duan Shun Jie hurriedly nodded his head, his mood became excited at once. Embarrassing for showing his too excessive excitement, he leaped into the water pretending to resume his bath --- as a matter of fact he was turning away to secretly smile.

"So, tomorrow you'll come here again to wait for me, I will take you to my house." Yan Xi Cheng pretended that he didn't see Duan Shun Jie's whole face look exactly like a mouse-that-had-snatched-away-cheese amusing expression, while still talking in his casual manner.

"Xi Cheng, you are such a nice person!" Duan Shun Jie swam back, with his fawned expression, he laughed while looking at Yan Xi Cheng.

Yan Xi Cheng's eyes remained with the same indifference, casually sweeping his gaze on Duan Shun Jie's excited face, indifferently falling to sweep his strong and healthy back, lightly he lingered his line of sight on his right shoulder --- Ouyang Fa De's Pingnan troops' Generals and Commanders carried the mark of Ouyang Fa De's family on their right shoulder. The body in front of his eyes were bright and clean, completely without any trace of whatever tattoo or printed mark.

Yan Xi Cheng, actually was Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, although his nature was fierce and ruthless, nicknamed "The Cruel Prince", however, in this world there wasn't a person who would actually hate a person who liked one's self, he was the same.

Even though the Duan Shun Jie who was showing his obvious favorable impression of himself more or less made him feel like laughing, but it also made him generate a kind of strange intimate feeling. He as the Honorable Seventh Prince, had constantly suffered either the dreadful looks or the detested looks of his surroundings, there was never one who approached him in the same manner as Duan Shun Jie, purely filled with a joyful and excited mindset.

After confirming that Duan Shun Jie was not an enemy, Yan Xi Cheng decided to regard him as an adorable harmless plaything.

It shouldn't be so bad to use him as a means to divert himself from boredom, ---Yan Xi Cheng, with an unknown implication and careful action darted a look at Duan Shun Jie while slightly smiling. Duan Shun Jie regarded the smiling face as an expression of friendliness, making him all the more eager to ingratiate himself with Yan Xi Cheng.

"Xi Cheng. Your hair seems to be so hard to wash, do you want my help to wash it?"

"Then, I will thank you in advance." To say the truth, Yan Xi Cheng has truly never washed his hair by himself, even if he stroked his hair for half a day, he still wouldn't be able to wash it properly. Now that Duan Shun Jie on his own accord suggested helping him out, it was exactly what he wished for.

Upon getting the approval, Duan Shun Jie was getting more enthusiastic. He abruptly climbed to the shore in a rush, hastily walked to Yan Xi Cheng's side and knelt down to quickly begin his helping out of washing the long hair -- the long black hair which he held in his hands was beautiful to the greatest extent, though it was damp, he still could feel the light and graceful soft to the touch strands. Duan Shun Jie was seemingly devoted to sincerely helping him wash his hair with all of his heart.

"This position is not really comfortable..." Yan Xi Cheng complained and looked as if he was a little bit unsatisfied.

He sat on the rock by the shore, Duan Shun Jie could only spill the water in his cupped hands on his head, the flow of the dripping water made him feel the uncomfortable coldness.

"So, what should I do..." Duan Shun Jie halted his hands' movement, looking at him in a daze.

Yan Xi Cheng had stood up, without waiting for Duan Shun Jie's response he conveniently reclined on Duan Shun Jie's thigh, let his long hair fall into the water. Yan Xi Cheng comfortably stretched his legs, and squeezed the white towel into Duan Shun Jie's hand, signaling that he could start to wash his hair.

Unconsciously, Duan Shun Jie received the towel. He lowered his head dumbfounded and blankly stared at Yan Xi Cheng ---the said person was shutting his eyes, in an extremely comfortable manner. Each and every outline of that perfect and unusual soft face was plainly visible before his eyes.

Yan Xi Cheng possessed rarely seen thick eyelashes, it was like the wings of butterflies, forming a bow like shadow on the sparkling and translucent skin; pointed nose on a plump and smooth skin with exquisite red lips... Duan Shun Jie did not dare to stop his gaze to linger on those lips, disorderly he shifted his gaze, he was met with the sight of a pole-like white and soft neck...

The big thigh muscle that was being made as a pillow by Yan Xi Cheng uncontrollably began to generate an incurable heat, Duan Shun Jie desperately tried to steady down his beating in a frenzied rhythm heart, however, the enthusiastically surging up heat seemed like it was unceasing and continuously rose up, to the point even his forehead had begun to ooze out a bead sized sweat...

"What's wrong? Quick wash it!" Yan Xi Cheng waited until he was a bit impatient, when he opened his eyes, he was met with the sight of the whole face reddened Duan Shun Jie to the extent of pathetic. Instantly, the corner of his lips rose up into a hard to detect silk threadlike smile.

Feigning his awareness, he absent-mindedly flipped his body, changed his posture from lying on his back to lying on his side on Duan Shun Jie's thigh. While on it, he stretched out his hand to seize his waist...

The seemingly unaware movements of Yan Xi Cheng made Duan Shun Jie feel that his body was burning and about to explode. All of his senses were filled with the faint delicate sweet scent from Yan Xi Cheng's body, a kind of

impulse to longingly embrace this body tightly on his bosom involuntarily rose up --- but his rationality promptly held him back in time, allowing Duan Shun Jie to pull himself away from Yan Xi Cheng's hand that had encircled on his waist. Standing up, he spoke with his muddle-headed words "wash by yourself!", abruptly he turned his body and leaped into the water, he did everything in his power to distance himself and swim away into another direction.

The burning hot body was not really cooled off by the pond's water temperature, he could clearly feel his own lustful desire. For a moment, Duan Shun Jie was having this wanted to cry as well as wanted to laugh feeling, the sadness as well as happiness simultaneously surged and gushed out from his heart, he was totally at a lost and couldn't ponder over the matter...

He could only desperately assign his arms to move faster, he only wanted to further himself, further and away from that man, away from that man who possessed the ability to snatch away all of his strength as well as his rationality...

Yan Xi Cheng held the white towel which Duan Shun Jie threw back at him, the corner of his mouth remained the same contained with a gentle smile. He acted like nothing had happened and sat back on the shore.

What an interesting guy!! Yan Xi Cheng started to feel that this time the trouble he went through to go out to the battlefield was not completely pointless.

Duan Shun Jie swam with all his might for quite some time before he could feel that he had slightly calmed down. He stopped to observe his surroundings, then realized that he had swum to the other side of the pond, the water temperature also obviously had become colder.

He turned his head to gaze at Yan Xi Cheng. From a far, his face didn't have any particular expression --- perhaps he actually didn't realize Duan Shun Jie's feeling? He was so beautiful, highly privileged status...Duan Shun Jie began to bitterly loathe his own self.

For him to actually have this filthy lustful desire towards a man he just met for the second time...

Or, could it be that his just now unfathomable attitude had hurt him? He decided to go to this newly acquainted friend's whereabouts to apologize. While turning his body, his right leg suddenly sent through a fit of severe pain, then soon after that it began to spasm in convulsion.

Heaven! He helplessly complained inwardly, why should he pull a muscle now of all time!!

What happen to that guy --- Yan Xi Cheng narrowed his eyes when he saw the man in the center of the pond who was desperately waving his hands in random movements, he was having a feeling of puzzlement.

Eventually he realized that something was not quite right; Duan Shun Jie's movement however he looked at it was like having his final struggle, this person also gradually sunk deeper and deeper... The amused smile on Yan Xi Cheng's face changed into a bitter smile.

What a troublesome man!!

Without caring, he leaped into the pond, swam towards the already couldn't be seen even the crown of his head Duan Shun Jie, pulled his head and dragged him back to the shore.

"Hack hack hack... hack hack hack..." Choked by no little amount of water, Duan Shun Jie was miserably coughing. Yan Xi Cheng only stood by his side with his like a smile yet not a smile expression while looking at him, once in a while he would lightly pat his back.

"Damn it! I am truly embarrassed!!" With great difficulty he caught up on his breathing, Duan Shun Jie was unable to restrain himself from cursing his own bad luck. To go so far as to let Yan Xi Cheng rescue him, to be in debt upon

other's favor!!

"Shun Jie, this is nothing much to be embarrassed on, don't take it to heart, moreover, I will not tell other people about this!" Yan Xi Cheng laughed inwardly, but his face was still the same cultured and refined expression.

"Xi Cheng, you didn't blame me?" Duan Shun Jie lifted his head, looking at Yan Xi Cheng with his face filled with a miserable expression.

"Why should I blame you?"

Staring at Yan Xi Cheng's indifferent without rhyme face, Duan Shun Jie finally could relax his heart --- looks like he wasn't aware of Duan Shun Jie's feeling.

"Blame me for earlier since I treated you terribly..."

"Yes, right! You were suddenly angry, you really gave me a start! Also I didn't know which part of me that had offended you." Living in the treacherous Imperial Palace, telling a lie and being pretentious naturally was Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's special ability.

"Forgive me! Forgive me! Xi Cheng, you can punish me, I will surely accept your punishment obediently." Duan Shun Jie apologized in a haste, whole heartedly only wanted forgiveness.

"Here, give you this." Upon lifting his head, he saw the stretched out white towel in front of his face. He was staring at Yan Xi Cheng while failing to understand the meaning. After realizing the intention, his whole face was beaming with laughter.

"I punish you to properly, whole-heartedly help me wash my hair!" Saying that out loud, Yan Xi Cheng once again reclined on Duan Shun Jie's thighs, closing both of his eyes.

A difficult to explain kind of unstoppable happiness was pouring and filling all parts of Duan Shun Jie's heart. He stretched out his hand to hold Yan Xi Cheng's neck in his palm, beginning to use a sincere, close to a worshipping manner, slowly he washed his hair for him...

The pitch black long hair was swaying like seaweed in the limpid clear water of the pond. The faint lamp light on Yan Xi Cheng's fair and clear face made his face have the kind of unworldly beauty ---Duan Shun Jie gently attended to him, little by little he understood the sweet happiness feeling he experienced for the first time in his life...

The feeling of merely having this person by his side, the satisfaction of merely being able to do whatever simplest thing for him, filled up and took up all the space in his heart, it was as if foretelling their not so distant predestination...

Today, after bidding his farewell to Yan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie rode his horse into the pitch dark mountain's forest and wandered around for a long while before he returned to his tent.

Entering the tent, the leaning to sleep on the table Chang Er opened his drowsy eyes, looking at him with his all still foggy with sleep eyes, then leaned over to continue to doze off. If this was the usual Duan Shun Jie, he would already be scolded in jest and be told to wake up. However the Duan Shun Jie today was facing whatever matters with gentle manner full of consideration --- taking the sleeping boy and brought him to his bed, Duan Shun Jie also didn't forget to cover him with a quilt before he went to his own room.

Lying on his bed, he was not like how he used to be, falling asleep the moment he reclined his body. In front of his eyes, Yan Xi Cheng's smiling face constantly appeared. That beauty which exceeded the border of gender allowed him to nearly forget that his feelings were originally deemed as a sinful action in the eyes of ordinary people.

Even if Duan Shun Jie's heart still possessed a shred of dread to be in love with the same sex, this kind of fear had been already erased by his naturally optimistic and open-minded disposition. In his innocent mind, he thought that if he firmly buried this feeling of love in the deepest part of his heart, then it wouldn't be a problem.

If he didn't say it out loud forever, then for all eternity, he would never be hurt; If he never made any demands forever, he still could see him like this, then it would be his greatest happiness, he still could do the smallest things for him, then it would be his supreme joy... Duan Shun Jie diligently tried to ignore the desires and yearning in his heart to touch and to possess that beautiful man. Secretly, he decided his determination.

The so called passionate love, basically couldn't be reasoned with, couldn't be as one aspired it to be --- the first sprouting seed of romantic love in all his life, made Duan Shun Jie taste the flavor of bitter agony above all.

Struggling between the sweetness and the anguish sentiment, he spent the sleepless night just like that...

End of Chapter 2

Notes

- [1.] Hold back the troops without moving, an idiom to say: To bide one's time by taking no action.
- [2.] Follow the path to one's own doom (idiom): to bring about one's own destruction.
- [3.] Literally written as 'play', but the actual meaning is to visit.

Fallen Hero Translation chapter 3



luxiufer.livejournal.com/34915.html

Fallen Hero Chapter 3

Tonight, Duan Shun Jie was still like before, arrived earlier than Yan Xi Cheng to their appointed place.



Waiting for a long while by the pond's side, the figure of Yan Xi Cheng still hadn't been seen yet.

Although he desperately convinced himself that nothing could have happened, nonetheless fear still slowly crawled up and filled all of Duan Shun Jie's heart. His imagination ran wild, imagining the possibilities of dangers that Yan Xi Cheng might run into, the more he thought about it, the more he got anxious. He nearly couldn't wait any longer.

Even if he only had several chances to interact face to face with him, Yan Xi Cheng with his mysterious beauty had completely occupied his thoughts. Making Duan Shun Jie afraid that he might drown in the midst of this kind of fantastic predestined relationship.

After spending more than an hour of unbearable time, Yan Xi Cheng finally rushed to his place with a hasty expression.

"I am sorry, something happened that delayed me, I have made Brother Duan wait for a long time." As soon as he arrived, Yan Xi Cheng directly apologized in a haste, even to the extent that he didn't have enough time to wipe the dripping sweat on his forehead with his sleeve.

"It's alright, since I also come here late, I didn't have to wait for long at all..." Duan Shun Jie feigned a relaxed manner, inwardly he let out a relieved sigh. He couldn't help but laugh at himself for letting his imagination run wild just a mere moment ago.

"Let's go." Yan Xi Cheng as if being possessed by a spirit, using the lantern on his hand to point at the direction he came from.

"Go? Go where?" Once he relaxed himself, Duan Shun Jie resumed his blank and foolish expression.

Yan Xi Cheng couldn't restrain his laughter: "Fool! Didn't you say you wanted to come to my house?"

"Ohh..." Getting scolded, Duan Shun Jie still foolishly nodded his head, then followed behind Yan Xi Cheng.

After walking for a while, Yan Xi Cheng suddenly turned his head and smiled lightly: "Shun Jie, tonight you stay over at my house? There is a vacant room anyway."

"Won't it cause you a great inconvenience? I think it won't be necessary..." Even though Duan Shun Jie also thought about being with him a little bit longer, yet the whole thought of military affairs burdened him, he couldn't help but be irresolute.

"There is nothing to be inconvenienced about. There is only me alone in my house now." Yan Xi Cheng remained with the same enthusiasm all along the track.

Looking at the still hesitating Duan Shun Jie, Yan Xi Cheng couldn't help but smilingly ridicule him: "Don't tell me that you don't dare to sleep alone? In that case, you can sleep together with me."

"Ah... No No No!! Really not necessary!!" Duan Shun Jie greatly embarrassed, hurriedly refused the idea.

Until he saw Yan Xi Cheng's mischievous laughter, Duan Shun Jie just realized that he had been teased again. His face involuntarily blushed at once.

"Xi Cheng, you really..." His mouth was complaining, but his heart generated a sweet feeling.

Just like that he followed behind Yan Xi Cheng and walked for not a long while, in front of his eyes appeared a building with a stretched long white wall with blue tiles.

"That is my house." Yan Xi Cheng indifferently pointed at that house.

"Your family is really wealthy!!" Following behind Yan Xi Cheng as he crossed the courtyard, Duan Shun Jie was looking in all directions while he unceasingly exclaimed in awe.

Looking at his gasped in admiration expression, Yan Xi Cheng truly wanted to laugh --- he ordered his men to search everywhere around the area to find this little decent looking house. Apparently the residents' main reason to flee was due to chaos caused by the war situation. The abandoned house was in a state of utter waste and had grown wild. He had to dispatch nearly half a battalion of soldiers to sweep until evening so that the house could be said as really clean.

Only like this Duan Shun Jie already had this whole face stunned look, if he saw his magnificent official mansion in Datong, wouldn't he be stunned to the point of his eyeballs falling out?

Truthfully, Yan Xi Cheng also felt very weird that he actually would invest so much effort in thinking about winning the favor of this countryside man, however, when he saw Duan Shun Jie's dumbly sighed in awe face, he felt that his whole day's trouble was worth it.

Most probably because there wasn't anyone like this amusingly adorable person around him --- Yan Xi Cheng justified his actions as nothing more than his playful nature to only want to have fun.

"Young Master, you have come back? The room is ready." Coming to welcome him was a young servant boy. As soon as he saw Yan Xi Cheng he respectfully bowed to greet.

Yan Xi Chen only slightly nodded his head, without saying anything he entered the inner courtyard.

Duan Shun Jie followed his footsteps altogether. After walking for several steps, he couldn't restrain himself from turning his head to look back --- the servant boy was staring at him with his whole face filled with curiosity. Realizing that Duan Shun Jie turned his head, afraid of being found out, he hung his head lower.

Maybe because he had been living in the remote mountain for a longtime, he never saw his master bring a friend home even once.

Duan Shun Jie was not a mistrustful person, very easily he explained the strange circumstances.

He followed Yan Xi Cheng to enter a room, there were already two beautiful maidens moving forward to welcome him again.

"Young Master, all is well. Do you need your servant to take your clothes off for you?"

"No need. You all can go away." Yan Xi Cheng waved his hand to ask them to leave.

"Xi Cheng, you are truly impressive!" Duan Shun Jie was unable to hold in his exclamation again. He had started to realize that Yan Xi Cheng was a high rank young master who didn't eat the food of common people.

"What are you talking about, these few attendants, each and every one is as stupid as a pig! They don't understand how to make a correct assessment of the situation..."

"Xi Cheng!!" Duan Shun Jie annoyed by his looking down on his servants' manner of speaking. "The way you said it was improper, how can you casually insult other as you please?"

Yan Xi Cheng creased his brows in an instant --- there were only people who flattered and obeyed him, was it ever anyone who dared to blame him straight to his face? He almost flared up right then and there, but facing Duan Shun Jie's innocent and genuine expression, in the end he had to suppress his temper.

"Don't say things that could dampen the spirit anymore. Shun Jie, do you want to have some tea?"

If his Imperial Brothers were witnessing the usually preserve and arrogant him actually allow himself to suffer such defeat, most probably he wouldn't know to what extent they would be shocked.

"Let me pour it..." Duan Shun Jie also afraid that Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng would be angry, his speaking tone involuntarily had turned into a careful and cautious manner. But when he stretched out his hand to fetch the tea, unwittingly his hand touched Yan Xi Cheng's fingers in the same place.

"Ah, I am sorry!" As if he got burned, he hurriedly drew his hand back, face also became so red.

Yan Xi Cheng secretly thought of an idea, he assumed an air of failing to understand the reason for the expression.

"Shun Jie, what's wrong? Are you feeling hot?"

Smooth white and cold palm was reaching out to cover the forehead of Duan Shun Jie, the proximity of their faces was so close to the point that he almost stuck to Duan Shun Jie's face, Yan Xi Cheng asked him.

The light indescribable fragrance transmitted to his senses, caused Duan Shun Jie to be dizzy and his eyes dimmed.

"No. No no. Nothing..." Staggeringly he retreated several steps, as if he was trying to avoid the force of fate right in front of him.

"If you feel hot, just take off your outer garment. At any rate, there aren't any outsiders here..."

Ignoring the confused face of Duan Shun Jie, Yan Xi Cheng took off his own outer garment at his own accord --- remaining was only a layer of flimsy thin silk which was nearly transparent under the light, his body's out line also distinctly visible...

Duan Shun Jie was unable to look straight at him, he could only uncomfortably turn his head to the other side.

The demon in Yan Xi Cheng's heart laughed even more delightfully.

Yan Xi Cheng swiftly passed by his hand to firmly grasp Duan Shun Jie's hand. Deliberately using his charming voice to confuse him while saying: "Shun Jie, don't you feel a bit tired? Do you want to lie down for a while..."

"Ah...Mm..."

The still confused and disoriented Duan Shun Jie ambiguously replied, just like that, he was firmly dragged to the bedside.

Without any awareness, muddle-headedly lied on the bed. He could see the whole face looking so pleased Yan Xi Cheng uprightly take off his shoe, then lied beside him.

"Shun Jie..." Yan Xi Cheng inclined his body, gently he called out to him.

His line of vision met the sight of Duan Shun Jie stiffly looking up while lying. Not the least bit willing to show his nervousness even though he was breathing heavily, making Yan Xi Cheng think of teasing him even more.

"So tired... I want to sleep. Shun Jie, you also sleep early, alright!" Pretending to strike a yawn, Yan Xi Cheng closed his eyes, whole face looked drowsy and sleepy.

Duan Shun Jie still hadn't enough time to let out a sigh of relief, Yan Xi Cheng already firmly nestled himself by his side, one of his hands frighteningly stayed on his waist...

"Xi Cheng..." The place that came into contact seemed to scatter an electric shock. Duan Shun Jie's voice sounded so much like he was struggling.

"How comfortable... Shun Jie, let me lean on you for a while, only for a while..."

The Seventh Prince faked his voice to sound spoiled, throwing his whole person into Duan Shun Jie's bosom.

Even though he was unimposing in appearance, Duan Shun Jie possessed a broad chest that would be yearned for to lean on by girls. Clean and warm breathing scent unceasingly came from his rising and falling chest.

Unexpectedly causing Yan Xi Cheng to feel comfortable.

Unable to move his hand and his feet, he helplessly looked at the closed eyes under the long eyelashes, the lips which contained a slight smile were pushed against his chest with that head...

Duan Shun Jie was unable to voice out even a single rejection, only his hysterical heart beat betrayed him by eagerly beating at full speed...

Nervousness, confusion, helplessness... but also a little bit of sweetness...

All of his feelings caused him to be at a loss as what to do.

Initially he only intended to tease Duan Shun Jie for a while, however, that kind of never felt before comfort as well as relaxed feeling unexpectedly truly made him sleepy...

Only for this one night. Allowing himself to be sentimentally attached and indulged in this gentle and warm chest. Yan Xi Cheng reasoned to straighten out himself.

This fool didn't know anything about his status. Also most likely had a particular favorable feeling towards the same gender as him...

In the past, it wasn't like there was nobody who harbored this kind of devious idea towards him who was beautiful and charming like a woman. But a person who actually had the audacity to put it in action... Yan Xi Cheng made a cold 'Humph' from the corner of his mouth.

However, this big idiot in front of him...

Yan Xi Cheng nearly laughed out loud, no matter how doubtful he also couldn't consider this kind of Duan Shun Jie would dare to put his feelings of admiration into action.

In that case --- just wait and see me playing with you!

With the person who occupied his mind snuggled closely, Duan Shun Jie originally thought that whatever happens he wouldn't be able to fall asleep.

The nice light scent that was coming from Yan Xi Cheng's body, unceasingly prompted his heart's weariness, in the end, he gradually sank and entered the dream world.

In the dream realm filled with the lingering fragrance...the dream was about beautiful scenery which Duan Shun Jie had never seen before.

Enveloped by misty scenery, he was going through hardship of climbing, on the high place, Yan Xi Cheng with his faintly discernible smile was looking in his direction, that smile eventually little by little turned into a mocking cold laugh...

Despite clearly understanding that he was dreaming, Duan Shun Jie still couldn't help but feel sad and dreary in his heart.

Obviously it was without hope, why should he be reluctant to give up this remaining moment?

Struggled to break away from the miserable and sad dreamland, Duan Shun Jie opened his eyes, by then he found out that the sky was already bright --- the light of the early morning sun seeped through the window, the birds in the mountains were sweetly singing and hooting...

For a while he couldn't recognize his location, absentmindedly sitting on the long bed in a daze. With difficulty he recalled last night's occasion, looking at the empty space by his side, by then he found out that Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's figure wasn't there.

Stretching out his hand to feel, the half space on the bed was already so cold.

Could it be that in the middle of his sleep he blurted out something he shouldn't say, did something he shouldn't do?

Duan Shun Jie became anxious at once, quickly raised and tidied up his clothing, in a rush he walked out the room.

Such a big yard was extremely tranquil, on the ground, the flower petals which were dropped and scattered by last night's wind were still there --- the yard seemingly hadn't been swept by anyone yet.

Duan Shun Jie's heart felt like hanging on his throat at once, he dashed to cross the winding corridor, treading to the place where the male servants and maiden servants turned up to greet them good health last night...

No one!! There wasn't anyone there! Not even a single person!

Looking around in the courtyard for nearly an hour, Duan Shun Jie finally admitted failure.

As if losing all of his power, he leaned on the wooden pillar of the corridor, acknowledging the fact that in this whole house, he was left alone.

Could it be that Yan Xi Cheng was actually the flower spirit or a willow demon? He actually could only appear at night then disappear without a trace in the daylight...

Making a mental association for his mysterious charm, even though Duan Shun Jie did not believe in whatever demon or random God, he also couldn't help but begin to consider the unconventional idea that the beautiful man was a spirit that came to the mortal life.

Standing blankly in the mountain breeze for quite a while, before his eyes the sun had gradually glared and become scorching hot. Duan Shun Jie dejectedly hung his head while leaving the gorgeous but tranquil and deserted house.

Back at his campsite, Chang Er quickly welcomed him.

"Big Brother Shun, you finally came back!" Chang Er's body was small, but his throat was not small the least bit, with one shout from him even the desolate feeling in Duan Shun Jie's heart had been driven away.

"Was there something that happened?" No matter how much he was worried by the sudden disappearance of Yan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie wouldn't dare to forget that after all, at the moment he was shouldering a heavy responsibility.

“Yuan’s joint army is waiting for you outside! They have waited for a long time to the point of impatience!” Chang Er gestured towards the not far Commander-in-Chief’s tent. Duan Shun Jie’s heart sank to half in an instant.

“I will go change into my clothes, you go to report first.” Swiftly he made his way to his own tent, Duan Shun Jie could only temporarily get rid of his own gloomy mood.

After getting ready at the speed of lightning, Duan Shun Jie walked at a fast pace to the Commander-in-Chief’s tent.

There wasn’t any trace of worry that showed on his face, the eyes under the helmet were bright like his usual soldierly bearing. All the standby soldiers were disorderly saluting him with eyes projecting their respect. All in all, in their hearts, the time and again repeatedly gained the military merit Duan Shun Jie was truly a great general.

Sitting in the Commander-in-Chief’s tent, the first thing Duan Shun Jie did was call in last night’s on the outlook duty Deputy General.

“Was there any movement from the mountain?” Honestly speaking, deep in his heart he was never hoping for starting a war. Every time he saw the battlefield littered with corpses, the earth covered by blood situation his heart couldn’t help but be depressed and grieved. But since he had already taken the weight of his position, all he could do now was work hard to reduce the casualties on their side --- therefore certainly the enemy soldiers’ life would serve as the price.

“Report, General. Our spy has reported, today, from early morning, Datong’s army seemingly shows an indication of moving their soldiers.”

Duan Shun Jie helplessly let out a sigh. “Ai, let everyone make the preparation to meet the enemy head on.”

What should happen surely would happen sooner or later, both sides had stationed their army on Mount Panlong already for numerous days. Wasting time for nothing like this for their army provisions as well as morale was quite a harsh trial.

Asking Chang Er to lead Cong Yun to him, Duan Shun Jie rode the horse to the front of the completely equipped soldiers, slowly he rode on his horse as his on a high platform to inspect the troops like he usually did.

Reining the horse to look around at the thousands of earnest eyes which stared at him, Duan Shun Jie diligently got rid of the heavy burden in his heart. With a slow and unhurried formidable posture, he drew out the long sword from his waist. Powerfully waved it ---upon this, the originally lining up to a square shaped formation soldiers immediately excitedly began to shift in disorder, in accordance to all of his trained in the battlefield tactical deployment of troops, they lined up the row to greet the enemy.

The air was filled with the sounds of rubbing metal and hoofing horses, nobody whispered nor glanced around. Duan Shun Jie had always been a careful and precise General when directing his troops, resulting in having eminent subordinates in his troops simply because of his strict and impartial discipline.

“Go to verify the Datong’s situation again.”

Before his eyes, the Pingnan troops had already guarded each and every strategic point, yet, Duan Shun Jie once again assigned a spy to scout out.

The spy dashed as if flying. Duan Shun Jie fixed his eyes at the distant point at the top of the mountain. Slowly, he narrowed his eyes...

Left, right, both pathes were not only steep, but also dangerous. He had dispatched his men to lay out countless traps along the way. If Datong’s army wanted to launch their attack, the only option was to cross Mount Panlong --- the weary enemy army who was just crossing the mountain wading the river to come, how could they deal with the

meritorious Pingnan's troops.

Pei Jin Tian, let me see what kind of method do you have to reach the sky...

"General, there are traps on the right road!" The spy who dressed up as a firewood gatherer cut a sorry figure while kneeling in front of General Pei's horse. "The surprise attack group has suffered heavy casualties!"

The lining up long platoon of Datong was marching forward. Pei Jin Tian was moving in the very front row. Behind him, a unit of magnificently decorated carriage followed --- the one who was sitting inside of course was the famous Datong Army's usually mysterious God, the Seventh Prince, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng.

Upon hearing the report from the spy, Pei Jin Tian creased his eyebrows at once, he waved his hands to the troops behind him. In an instant the whole battalion halted their marching forward movement. Stopped at the mountain pathway.

"Your Highness, there are traps on the right road. What should we do now?" He respectfully bowed while facing the curtain --- ever since he suffered the whipping, he never again dared to conduct any disrespectful behavior towards Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng.

Having heard what was said, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng creased his eyebrows at once. The spy from the left road had reported that the left side bridge had been tampered with. Looks like this whoever Shun wanted to make sure that Datong's army wouldn't be able to cross Mount Panlong.

"Tell everybody to go up, back to the former camp and await orders." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng issued an order with his lowered voice.

Looking downward from the top of Mount Panlong, Pingnan Troops' campsite arrangement was neat and tidy. There wasn't any trace of great mobilizing of army inside the camp. On the contrary, everything was eerily tranquil, to the point of making Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng inwardly apprehensive.

Shun---

Slightly narrowed his pair of eyes, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's expression didn't reveal any obvious emotion. The nearby attendants secretly became afraid --- whenever Seventh Prince revealed this kind of face, surely someone would meet their bad luck.

Even though they would offend the honorable Crown Prince, they absolutely wouldn't want to become Seventh Prince's enemy. This was what caused everyone who had witnessed firsthand the fierceness of the Seventh Prince to be on guard.

"Pei Jin Tian, how do you see our army's chances of success for today?" Exercised restraint to suppress the radiant light in his eyes, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng inclined his head to ask the Pei Jin Tian who stood by his side.

Pei Jin Tian was also an experienced and astute warrior who had rigorous schemes and deep foresight, yet, standing by this imposing and intimidating Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's side, he didn't know why, his head actually became empty as if had stopped to think and became such a humble man who couldn't despise but could only flatter him.

"Humble subject couldn't see it. How does Your Highness see it?" After saying those words, he almost bit off his own tongue. Even he couldn't understand, why the usually poised him, the number one warrior in Datong, after he suffered the whipping, towards this prettier than any woman little prince, had generated such a deep fear.

"As I see it," Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng coldly laughed, "... those traitors from Pingnan are about to meet their end, death is near at hand. They won't live for long anymore!"

“Pei Jin Tian, you take the control from here. I will return after I go to scout at the Pingnan troops’ camp.” Without waiting for Pen Jin Tian’s response, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng already soared high in the sky like a light wind, his figure was like the lightning which brushed over towards the mountain’s base.

Pei Jin Tian had never thought that the Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng who enjoyed his high position and lived in comfort actually would decide to personally scout on the enemy’s movement. It was too late for him to prevent, he could only gaze at the graceful figure’s back that was already several tens zhang^[1] away in a mere second with his mouth widely opened, foolishly rooted on the spot...

Light as a feather flowing in the mountain breeze, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng’s foot’s tip nearly never touched the land. As if flying, he crossed the precipitous mountain’s cliff and arrived at the outer side of the campsite.

All along the way, passing through the mountain path, there were many simple traps featured at every several steps. Though he could easily avoid all of them, but when Datong’s army launched the attack, these traps couldn’t help but slow down the pace of the advancing march, combining with the personal casualties, the Datong army would be crippled and the momentum would be weakened even before they had direct contact with the Pingnan troops.

The powerful tactic of the enemy made Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng become even more excited. That kind of thirst to overthrow the enemy who was evenly matched in terms of strength with him surged out and filled his thoughts.

Relying on his strange and changeful elegant air kung-fu which he possessed, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng randomly killed one of Pingnan’s soldiers at the lookout post. He changed into the Pingnan’s uniform and blackened his face to camouflage his excessively pretty and charming face. Proudly he stepped forward to enter the hinterland of the campsite.

Even though the Datong army had been glaring at them like a tiger watching its prey from the top of the mountain, the campsite of Pingnan troops remained extraordinarily quiet. The strangely few number of people allowed Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to sniff the perilous atmosphere.

“General Shun’s maneuver is honestly really terrific!!” The brush past soldiers’ conversation made Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to prick up his ears.

“Indeed! To exert this kind of strategy. In my opinion, the Datong army definitely wouldn’t know what had happened even when they are facing their death!” The two youths burst out in laughter together, completely unaware that the eyes of a man from their back revealed a malicious deed in a split second.

Is he really that great? It will be me who will let you face death while not knowing what had happened!

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng had never been a practitioner of Buddhism. Possessing such outstanding skill of martial arts that surpassed all, his hands had been soaked with the fresh blood of many people who tried to obstruct his way.

The title of “Warlord of Datong”, couldn’t be gained by depending on the waving fan inside the tent. Hearing the praises and compliments from the Pingnan soldiers for this whoever “Shun”, the murderous intention inside Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng’s heart became visible. At that very moment he inwardly decided: If he wanted to win this war, he absolutely couldn’t let this “Shun” live.

Clarifying the location of the Commander-in-Chief’s tent, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng resolutely marched towards the confirmed direction.

“Vice General Rong, everyone already on standby in their respective place?” Inside the tent, Duan Shun Jie stood firmly in his martial attire. He was pointing at the battle formation map on the old-fashioned narrow table in front of him while asking the capable Vice General at his back.

“Everybody awaiting to ambush, only waiting for the Datong’s army to force their entrance, the brothers will

annihilate them in one move.” Vice General Rong in his thirties was his most trusted man, although he was older than Duan Shun Jie, towards his superior, he would show a completely reverent and respectful expression.

“Good! But what have the Datong Army been doing? Why in such a longtime they still haven’t made any advancement?” Duan Shun Jie nodded his head to express his admiration, yet still couldn’t conceal the uncertainty in his mind.

“Who knows what kind of medicine they sell inside of their bottle guard ^[2]! This Pei Jin Tian could be said as an old fox. Too bad for him this time he has to face General Shun, perhaps, he couldn’t help but to return in low spirits.”

“We may not look down and underestimate the force of Datong’s army! After all, everything still has to be carefully assessed.” Even though the plan has already been arranged thoroughly, Duan Shun Jie still wouldn’t dare to lower his guard and treat them lightly.

“Who are you!” The loud shout from outside transmitted to the tent. Duan Shun Jie and Vice General Rong simultaneously turned their head --- the curtain at the tent’s door was lifted, from there, a tall man dressed in Pingnan troop’s uniform emerged abruptly. A soldier who was supposedly to guard the tent was standing awkwardly behind him, evidently ashamed because he had failed to stop the intruder from charging in.

It turned out to be his own man --- Duan Shun Jie let out a relieved sigh, in a low voice he asked: “From which battalion? What’s the matter?”

The man was wearing his helmet very low, nearly blocked his eyes from view, his whole face was blackened by the smeared ash, and the oversized armor also made his figure couldn’t be seen clearly.

“Shun?” The man’s voice was very strange, low and hoarse to the point of unnatural, there was a mixture of feeling extremely shocked and as if taken aback in the voice.

“Who are you?” Duan Shun Jie was alarmed and on guard, his hand gripped the hilt of the sword on his waist.

“You are Shun?!” The man asked one more time, his whole voice was as if heaving a sigh.

At the moment when Duan Shun Jie wanted to draw his sword to interrogate this man head on, that stranger already turned his body and walked out the tent with large steps, leaving the three people inside the tent with baffled expressions.

When Duan Shun Jie regained his senses and went out the tent to pursue, even that person’s shadow already couldn’t be seen, it seemed like he was merely an illusion.

“Tell all the brothers in every barracks, take precautions and strengthen the guards. Dispatch two more squads to reinforce the lookout post!” Firmly he issued an order to be on guard, Duan Shun Jie, no matter what, still couldn’t erase the uneasiness in his heart.

Since earlier he had ordered his men to excavate the ground at their campsite. They only had to wait for Datong’s army to attack them then they could take their advantage during the confusion to humiliate the leader by bullying the subordinate. The absolutely perfect plan, at the moment only needed to wait for the enemy to walk right into the trap --- at such a crucial time, unexpectedly someone broke through their campsite, without saying anything just turned his body and left --- no matter how he saw it, it was still extremely abnormal.

Vertically jumped into the rugged mountain path, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng carefully avoided the intensive traps. He couldn’t restrain the corner of his mouth from forming a cold and cruel smile.

Shun... Duan Shun Jie...

He wouldn't have guessed that General Shun was actually the very man who could only foolishly smile at his beauty. Even if Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn't believe in the existence of fate, at this moment, it was difficult for him not to feel a bit of the mystery of fate.

It has been destined by Heaven! Only I could be the winner of this war.

He was anticipating this General Shun to die under his sword before he cleared away the Pingnan troops. But now...

Based on the unexplainably vague relationship between him and this Shun, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng already had the confidence to completely overthrow the whole Pingnan troops' force.

Even until he had changed into a fresh prince's clothing, and sat upright in the magnificent carriage surrounded by the army's banner, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng still couldn't restrain the corner of his mouth from carrying such a strange smile.

"Your Highness, please issue an order to attack!"

"No, change of plan. The army will withdraw!" The unexpected instruction from inside the carriage caused Pei Jin Tian to nearly dropped his chin.

"Your Highness..."

"Instruct them to retreat. All the army withdraw." To chop the nail and slice the iron, unhesitatingly, his tone was not allowing any explanations to be offered. Although there was a thick and long curtain between them, Pei Jin Tian almost could picture the obstinate expression of that beautiful face at the moment.

Helplessly while transmitting the withdraw instruction, he still was unable to unload his filled by doubt hesitation --- why after returning from Pingnan's campsite, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng made a decision not to attack, furthermore, had this whole confident face that the victory was within his grasp's expression?

Applying a not so refined gesture to lean on the carriage's wall, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was assuming a form of leisure and carefreeness. At the moment his head had not ceased to ponder over how to thoroughly defeat Shun, as well as to thoroughly defeat Pingnan's troops.

The feeling of amusing himself by playing with this foolish Duan Shun Jie, at present had totally changed into a cruel desire to thoroughly conquer him and completely defeat him.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's eyes revealed the same blood thirst as a wild wolf, occasionally it would transform into a crafty smile, causing the young male servant by his side's heart to fill with fear and trepidation in the face of disaster all along.

Returning to the stationed campsite, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng obviously had made a decision --- also resumed his indifferent appearance, not showing his full of confidence face. Whoever couldn't see that he actually held such a trump card.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 3.

Notes:

- 1) Zhang : A unit of length, roughly 3.3 meters.
- 2) What kind of medicine they sell inside of their bottle guard, this is literally translated and means: What they have up their sleeves.

Fallen Hero Translation chapter 4



luxiufer.livejournal.com/35468.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 4



The next night after the sudden as well as strange withdrawal of the attack, a tall and thin shadow fluttered and left the sternly guarded campsite of Datong. Straight towards the depths of Mount Panlong as swift as a light --- that shadow was Yan Xi Cheng.

Hurriedly to the pond's side, the place where the two of them met for the very first time, just as expected, Yan Xi Cheng sure enough found Duan Shun Jie whose back was facing him sitting by the pond's side. Obviously he hadn't realized the approaching Yan Xi Cheng, he was staring blankly at the dark loaming water of the pond's surface.

"Shun Jie." He strode a step ahead, gently calling out to him.

Duan Shun Jie with his unable to believe expression turned his head to face him, at the moment he saw Yan Xi Cheng, he couldn't restrain himself from crying out in shock.

"Xi Cheng!! It's you!"

He had never met anyone who treated him with such warmth and genuine feeling --- Yan Xi Cheng helplessly embraced Duan Shun Jie who rushed and threw himself at him without warning. Didn't know why, he felt extremely amused.

With much difficulty he calmed down, Duan Shun Jie of course would be embarrassed by his previous went out of control manner. Pulling Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to walk and sit at the pond's side, with a slight feeling of uneasiness he asked: "Xi Cheng... Where did you go that day? When I woke up and I couldn't find you, I was worried to death!"

His calm and steady expression didn't match with his warm feeling, causing Yan Xi Cheng to nearly burst out in laughter. Firmly controlling his true feelings, he feigned his remorseful and uneasy voice when he said: "I am really sorry! That day, in the middle of night, my father sent a letter. He wanted me at top speed following him to hide at the relative's place... I had no choice but to abandon you... Forgive me!"

Remorseful expression, remorseful voice... Even in the moonless night, Duan Shun Jie still couldn't resist that pair of unimaginably beautiful eyes.

"It's alright, your family even got into trouble and had to flee in all directions... This war truly has brought trouble to you!" He comforted Yan Xi Cheng, making the Seventh Prince who knew about his status to secretly coldly laugh in his heart.

"No, it didn't! If only this was not wartime, I really want to be on good terms with you Shun Jie. But it is too bad... Tonight I secretly came here to bid you farewell. My father said that recently Jiangnan has been continuously in war. He decided that the whole family will move to the mainland."

"Ah?" Duan Shun Jie revealed a shocked face, "How could it come to this! Could it be tonight... tonight is actually the last time we could see each other?" Unable to pretend, his anxiousness leaked out and shown in his eyes. Even an idiot could see that he was unwilling to part with Yan Xi Cheng.

"Mm." Nodding his head, Yan Xi Cheng pretended to be in the same bitterness. He shifted his body to get closer to Duan Shun Jie. The both of them as if securely snuggled up together, "Shun Jie and I to meet like old friends, then helplessly played by fate, our time together were actually only for such a short duration."

He himself was a little bit can't stand the sappiness in his words. Looking at Duan Shun Jie who was imitating him in showing his immeasurable regrets and moved expression, Yan Xi Cheng almost wanted to clap his hands applauding his excellent performance.

However... this play hadn't reached the climax part yet. For the time being, he still needed to exercise restraint in order to take this act to the next part.

"Shun Jie, our separation is near at hand. Tonight you must properly send me off."

The touching language was completely unlike a conversation between two friends of the same gender. However, Duan Shun Jie who was secretly in love with Yan Xi Cheng couldn't feel the strange things. He was drowning in the midst of separation's angst.

"Brother Cheng, what are you talking about... Even if you didn't say, I will still send you off." Duan Shun Jie's tone was miserable and sad. Obviously he didn't want to be separated with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng.

Helping Yan Xi Cheng to stand up, Duan Shun Jie followed him to enter the thick forest by the pond's side together.

"My relative's place is right after we pass through this forest."

In the pitch dark forest, the only light source was the torch which was carried by Duan Shun Jie, to illuminate the mountain path which was rarely walked by anyone in normal times.

The two people silently walked together. Duan Shun Jie frequently showed his consideration by holding Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, Yan Xi Cheng also took advantage of the situation by assuming his weak and delicate appearance when he leaned on his body.

In the stuffy and hot night of summer, Duan Shun Jie's nose unceasingly smelled the refined fragrance from Yan Xi Cheng's body, making him unable to refrain his heart from slowly became restless.

Even though they were only illuminated by a torch, Yan Xi Cheng still could clearly see the flushed red of Duan Shun Jie's face.

The corner of his mouth floated up a threadlike flirtatious and sweet smile. Pointing at the distant place hidden in the pitch black of late night, he said: "Just walk for less than an hour, we can already get out of the forest. Shun Jie, you can just send me until that part."

A thread of melancholy immediately emerged on Duan Shun Jie's face. He wordlessly nodded his head not wanting to talk.

There was a chaotic situation, the predestined relationship between two people also became short. The first love in his life, didn't even had the time to say the affection that stored in the deepest part of his heart, he had to be faced with separation... Melancholy and lingering feeling filled all of his heart. Duan Shun Jie could only use the silence to suppress his anguishing pain.

Walking in this high as the mountain and long as the river¹ world, he was afraid that in this lifetime he wasn't fated to meet again...

The rim of his eyes couldn't help but become warm, Duan Shun Jie gritted his teeth to hold back his love that almost bubbled out from the bottom of his heart.

In the end, he decided to take this feeling and bury it in the bottom of his heart. After all, sometimes, some matters would be better if we choose not to say it out loud.

He couldn't be certain that Yan Xi Cheng would accept his feelings, after all is said and done, they were of the same sex...

Without any hopes to confess his feelings, he would bid farewell while maintaining their status as friends. If in the future they could have the chance to see each other, he would still be able to show his concern by saying 'Have you been well since we last met?'

Walking in silence for a while, the thinly sparse light from the outer side of the forest almost could be seen. The bitterness in Duan Shun Jie's heart slowly rose up --- he really hated to part, yet he didn't have any position or any reason that could make him urge this not too intimate friend to stay by his side.

The conflicted heart caused him to drag his steps, falling back behind Yan Xi Cheng by several steps.

"Shun Jie, Look. We're almost there..." Yan Xi Cheng suddenly stopped his step, he was pointing at the place in front with a slightly smiling face.

The next second his expression suddenly changed, crying out an "AH", soon after that his body fell to the ground in a rigid motion.

Duan Shun Jie not even had the time to be shocked had already came up with a reaction --- he rushed to him, powerfully pulled Yan Xi Cheng to his bosom.

"Xi Cheng, you..." By the corner of his eyes, a flamed colored little red snake was slithering on the thick grass and in a very quick speed had entered the crevice of the stone --- and on Yan Xi Cheng's outer ankle, there was a terrible deep wound. The fresh blood was gushing through white shock.

"Is that snake poisonous? Xi Cheng, how is your condition?" Duan Shun Jie was completely helpless to conceal the anxiety from his voice, he busily took off Yan Xi Cheng's socks, leaned over to that white as snow ankle, wanted to suck out the blood from the wound.

"Don't suck it! That snake doesn't have any poison in it." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng immediately stopped Duan Shun Jie's movement, "Don't touch the wound."

Duan Shun Jie quickly bent over his waist to take Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng into his embrace: "Then I will take you to see the doctor."

"No need! This wound doesn't need to be treated! Besides, doctor also couldn't treat the wound caused by 'Qi Qing Luan²'." Yan Xi Cheng struggled, signaling Duan Shun Jie to put him down.

"Qi Qing Luan?" The never heard before name of the snake made Duan Shun Jie slightly dizzy. But he still obediently put Yan Xi Cheng down, let him rest his head on his knee.

"Qi Qing Luan is a snake that could only be found in this Mount Panlong. Although not a poisonous kind of snake, but the person who got bitten will... Will be in a great sexual desire. If one couldn't find a girl to let off the sexual urge within a quarter of an hour, it will be a permanent lifelong disability... that's why it is also called as 'Qi Bu Luan Qing³'."

"What lifelong disability?" Duan Shun Jie asked spontaneously, however, before his eyes, Yan Xi Cheng both cheeks suddenly became bright red, making him understood at once.

"Oh... I understand, you don't have to say it. But in the middle of the night, also this place is a wild mountainous country, where do we find a girl to console?" After he was clear of the matter, he also understood that this matter couldn't be delayed. The snake name was "Seven Step", meant that the time for showing the effects was definitely of the briefest...

Duan Shun Jie since earlier was already greatly agitated with his mind in a turmoil, and Yan Xi Cheng's condition caused him to appear even more anxious --- before his eyes, the originally white as suet jade face and neck had caught a layer of abnormal redness, his ears also could hear the faint rapid pants coming from Yan Xi Cheng.

"I will take you to go and find together, sooner or later we will be able to find!"

He was about to support Yan Xi Cheng to get up, but forcefully shoved by him.

"Don't... You don't lean close to me! I wouldn't be able to control myself once it shows its effect! I am afraid that I would bring harm to you... You just don't come closer!" Both of Yan Xi Cheng's hands were holding on to a big tree by his side, his panting had become even more rapid.

"What do you mean?" Duan Shun Jie became confused --- bring harm to him? He was not a girl, how could Yan Xi Cheng possibly bring harm to him?

Yan Xi Cheng could see his confusion, with a great effort he explained: "When the lust comes to effect, I won't debate over a man or a woman, as long as I could have the sexual intercourse... If I happened to do something that was against my morality towards you... Shun Jie, you... it's better if you just strike me to death in one hit." He deliberately spoke with a slow and arousing sympathetic voice, although the meaning of his words were to resist, but his manner of speaking was purely to seduce.

Of course, from the beginning he already knew that the Duan Shun Jie whose heart was in turmoil definitely would take the bait.

"Could it be that... A man also was able to help you dissolve the poison?"

His back was facing Duan Shun Jie, Yan Xi Cheng almost burst out in laughter for Duan Shun Jie became this weak-minded because of this matter --- but he was about to succeed soon, he couldn't possibly ruin his own good news.

After applying such a conflicted and struggling expression to lightly nod his head, without a doubt, the next moment Duan Shun Jie had embraced him firmly from behind.

"Then... just...just let me..." His voice was very soft, even if Yan Xi Cheng didn't turn his head, he also could tell that at this very moment Duan Shun Jie was definitely being shy, ashamed and unable to show his face.

He was set on putting on an act by struggling for a little while more: "No way! Shun Jie, I absolutely cannot do this! I could hurt you!"

Along with his clear stream of dripping tears, Duan Shun Jie was alarmed and confused: "You will not! I absolutely wouldn't blame you! To be able to do something for you is all I could wish for! No matter what, it's all because I am most willing to do it, I definitely wouldn't blame you! "It was as if he had to exhaust all of his courage so that he could say out loud his feelings. Duan Shun Jie could only think that the Heaven had a pity on him, giving him a chance to accomplish his aim in telling the feelings from the bottom of his heart.

Yan Xi Cheng was suppressing his laughter to the point of hurting his stomach. He resisted with great difficulty to stop his laughter from bursting out. His face twisted to become a taken by surprise delight but also mixed with various innumerable complicated feelings.

"Shun Jie..." It was like he had summed up an infinite tender affection in his calling voice, in the end, it was a mere script of a false display of affection.

All you could wish for? Most willing to do?

Duan Shun Jie, just you wait for a little longer, you will find out what kind of thing that all you wish for and you're most willing to do really is!

Finalizing the determination to resolve something in the shortest time possible, Yan Xi Cheng slanted pointing at the direction from where they were coming from: "Just now, when I was coming here, I saw a cave there, let's go there..."

Nodding his head, Duan Shun Jie supported Yan Xi Cheng to walk to that place --- Yan Xi Cheng could feel that his body was slightly trembling unceasingly. Obviously he was nervous as well as confused deep in his heart.

Feigning an appearance of can't bear the strain, he threw himself at Duan Shun Jie and firmly clung on his front garment. Yan Xi Cheng's heart was filled with the proud for his successful plan.

What truly spoiled the fun was, the opponent's position was too low, making him couldn't enjoy the game to the fullest.

Shortly after tens of steps on the road, Duan Shun Jie had this immeasurable feeling of bitterness. Finally, the two people stepped in the cave together.

The formerly pitch-dark space because being illuminated by the torch light slowly showed its original appearance: The cave wasn't big, but apparently it was considerably dry. The only way to connect to the outside world was the cave's entrance where the both of them came from. Near to the base of the cave was a piece of flat stone. More or less it seemingly was a bed of stone created by nature --- in other words, it was a rather suitable place to commit that kind of affair.

Under the fire light, Duan Shun Jie's face became even redder. His hand which was supporting Yan Xi Cheng on his underarm was tightened up unwittingly. Yet, he continued with his steady steps towards that flat stone.

"... Just do it here." Helping Yan Xi Cheng to sit on that flat stone, Duan Sun Jie spoke with his quivering voice.

Yan Xi Cheng made a cold snort inwardly.

Nonsense! This place could be found after I assigned my men to search for half of the day! You must know, this place is not just a random whatever mountain cave to be suitable to do that thing --- Yan Xi Cheng was laughing secretly, on the other hand he had to maintain his false delicate appearance due to his unable to bear the effects of the poison by gasping and panting heavily.

"Shun Jie, then, should I spread the clothes on the stone?" He leaned close to Duan Shun Jie, asking him with his lowered voice. Without waiting for his answer, he had untied his clothes piece by piece, layer upon layer he spread them on the surface of the flat stone.

Illuminated by the light of fire, the little by little uncovered fair and clear as if jade body of Yan Xi Cheng was exquisite and translucent. Extremely beautiful to the point of making Duan Shun Jie not dare to watch intensely. He could only feel that even his heart had started to tremble...

"Put out the light of the torch..." Duan Shun Jie indistinctly mumbled in hesitation. There was a trace of confusion and an uncovered fear for this never felt before dread in his voice.

Yan Xi Cheng couldn't help but want to laugh, with much difficulty he held it back. Pulling out his utmost guilty conscience and his utmost agony of expression, he worked hard to let the sparkling water filled his whole eyes.

"Shun Jie, let's not do it! My life is fated to end this way. You just leave me alone here and quickly go! Just let me die here! Take advantage that now I am still fully conscious, you just quickly run away!" Using his anguish voice to cry out, Yan Xi Cheng gave all his might in playing the role of a refined noble who would never harm Duan Shun Jie

even if he had to die.

"It is alright! I am a man, this kind of thing is nothing to me!" Duan Shun Jie without a doubt was moved by him. Not mentioning the torch anymore, he vehemently reclined on the flat stone with a ready to sacrifice himself posture. Tightly closed both of his eyes, he stretched out his arms to Yan Xi Cheng.

"Come! It is alright!"

If letting Duan Shun Jie to carry on with his performance of an ignorant and uneducated virgin boy, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng really was afraid that he would expose the secret right then and there due to the reason of not being able to hold back his laughter. Because he had to conduct this meticulous scheme all the way until the end, he applied a manner of a wanton man under influence of lewd poison to throw himself at Duan Shun Jie...

Pretending to lustfully gasp and pant, his hand randomly groped and fumbled about the closed eyes and trembling body. Swiftly undid the complicated sash and buttons, bringing his bare naked body to squeeze in the space among Duan Shun Jie's pair of thighs whose body was already in the similar circumstances with him, absolutely naked without a stitch of clothing.

At the moment when the two young and warm bodies came into contact for the very first time, Yan Xi Cheng could clearly feel that Duan Shun Jie instinctively trembled. Afraid that he would revolt, Yan Xi Cheng immediately used his body to press him down. On one side, posing by means of to get something done quickly, he began to gently caress and fondle the body underneath him.

Because pretending that he had lost his rationality due to the poison effect, Yan Xi Cheng's stroke was rough and filled with cruel implication. Being rubbed and kneaded like that repeatedly on his chest and the inner side of his thigh, Duan Shun Jie couldn't help but begin to softly sob. The hands which placed on Yan Xi Cheng's back also started to clench with force.

Although at the beginning Yan Xi Cheng only took this as a false lovemaking play, but the lust of a man very soon got him drunk and became intoxicated with the solid and sturdy body of Duan Shun Jie which seeped out sweat --- forcefully lifted up Duan Shun Jie's left thigh, when that slightly red small opening was revealed under the feeble light of the torch, at that very moment even Yan Xi Cheng could feel that he really wanted to enter that warm and honest body directly.

Still, very quickly he gained control over his impulse. Because this sexual intercourse strategy was nothing more than a beginning of his plan, if by chance because of his excessively rough action he made Duan Shun Jie generated a kind of hatred and disgust, then all of his plan would become an utter failure.

Not looking at his own already high-spirited desire under his hip, Yan Xi Cheng spat a mouthful of saliva on his right hand, slowly brought his moistened forefinger to thrust in the red-hot and very narrow back entrance...

"Eh!!... Ahh... What are you doing!" As expected, Duan Shun Jie gave a horrible shriek, desperately shaking his body to squeeze out the intruding finger. The violent shrank of delicate skin around his anus was sucking in the finger even deeper.

The pain in Duan Shun Jie's voice made Yan Xi Cheng became even more excited. He began to jerk his finger in a thrusting motion, in the process, he added another finger and now the intruding fingers had become two.

Duan Shun Jie was twisting and twirling his body unceasingly out of pain. Unconsciously, the pair of hands that already lost its power was firmly grasping the clothes under his body. Yan Xi Cheng expressionlessly whipped his fingers in a quick pace. Until he could feel that the originally tight creases had completely loosen and opened up, he inserted the third fingers inside...

If Duan Shun Jie had whatever kind of sex experience, he should have known that someone who was being dominated by his lust wouldn't be able to calmly tantalize his partner. However, the Duan Shun Jie right now had been completely controlled by the upsurge storm from inside of his body. The tightly closed eyes made him even more incapable from seeing Yan Xi Cheng's mocking face while teasing him. He could only be able to sway and writhe out of pain in accordance to the thrust and stab movement, and also moaning...

Relying on his plentiful knowledge which he gained from living in the palace, Yan Xi Cheng very fast had figured out the place to allow Duan Shun Jie to be unable to maintain his self-control and let out his moaning cry. His fingers continuously stimulated that very place that could make Duan Shun Jie no longer hold his erection. The tip of his erection had begun dripping the transparent XXX. Finally, when Yan Xi Cheng made another press to that very point, he burst out all of his desire...

The moment when he was climaxing, Duan Shun Jie opened both of his eyes widely, he met the scene of Yan Xi Cheng taking his swelling and standing upright desire and thrusting it in the already relaxed and widely opened body of his.

"So hurts!!"

To face the XXX to the point of a cruel scene, Duan Shun Jie let out a miserable scream. His voice was as if he was helpless and terrified.

Duan Shun Jie once had imagined the sweet scene when he took Yan Xi Cheng to his embrace, however at this moment, even if both of them had the same intimacy, but the one who was being pushed down turned into him. The vigorous assault and the pain of his body made him nearly lose his mind just like this.

The pain as if being ripped apart continuously coming from the place that was being firmly pressed. Yan Xi Cheng almost had to extort all of his strength to restrain the fiercely struggling Duan Shun Jie.

"Forgive me! Shun Jie, I truly couldn't control myself!" After the words escaped his mouth, even Yan Xi Cheng began to doubt himself, actually he was putting on an act or speaking the truth. He only knew that being wrapped up by the completely warm and tight inexperience delicate muscle, his heart was genuinely filled with the thought to drain off the desire within his body.

Stretching out his hands to wrap Duan Shun Jie in his bosom, Yan Xi Cheng unceasingly kissed his covered by sweat cheeks. After he could feel that Duan Shun Jie had softened himself, only then did he start his moving back and fro motion...

"It is really painful..." Duan Shun Jie on the crook of Yan Xi Cheng's arm clenched his teeth while complaining.

From Yan Xi Cheng's heart once again bubbled up a kind of hard to explain difficult to describe feeling. It was like a regiment of flame was colliding inside... He tried to tighten up his hold on both of Duan Shun Jie's hand. Once again he quickened the speed of his stabbing and pulling inside Duan Shun Jie's body. In passing, on his lips, neck, one by one he left his love bites traces.

Inside of Duan Shun Jie was very hot, the muscle was very tight, firmly wrapped up his desire. Causing Yan Xi Cheng to deeply feel the never experience before intense pleasure...

"Xi Cheng..."

In the hot to the point of feeling like burning atmosphere, Duan Shun Jie cried out the name --- the pain to the point of numbing lower part of his body from unceasingly being intensely jerked, he was practically losing his ability to think deeply. Only these two characters that had deeply engrossed in his heart could give the him who had fallen into this hopeless situation a little bit of comfort.

For a split moment, a hard to explain numbness could be felt from the deepest part of his spread open body, went straight to his heart. Duan Shun Jie eventually forfeited his awareness, he began to move his waist in accordance to Yan Xi Cheng's swing and thrust movement, welcoming him to the deepest part of his body.

Going even deeper, deeper. Moving even harder, harder...

All the way until the moment Yan Xi Cheng unloaded all of his bursting hot body fluid inside his body.

"Shun Jie, are you alright?"

"Shun Jie!!"

Duan Shun Jie slowly opened his eyes. The reflection that pleased his eyes was the anxious face of Yan Xi Cheng -- his eyes had already regained the clear and calm soberness. Looks like the poison in his body had faded away.

"Shun Jie, forgive me, forgive me! I am to be blamed! Although if you made me into mincemeat I also wouldn't blame you! Shun Jie!!" Yan Xi Cheng was good at putting on an act, even though at this moment he was still bare naked, even if inside the body of the target of his deception still remained with his bodily fluid, he actually was able to fake out the act of because he had wronged his friend he was deeply hurt and blamed himself appearance.

Looking at Duan Shun Jie's blank expression, he grabbed the dagger by his side.

"Shun Jie, I... I don't have the face to see you again! Let's meet again in the next life!" He used the dagger and directed it at his chest, assumed a posture that he was about to stab himself.

"Xi Cheng, you absolutely may not commit this foolish thing! This is what I am most willing to do, I definitely won't blame you! The truth is I... I actually..." Duan Shun Jie busily seized his hand, desperately snatched away the dagger.

"Actually I..." Duan Shun Jie hugged Yan Xi Cheng tightly. The complicated feelings caused him to firmly close his eyes, "Actually since long I have... I have been in love with you! I love you! I don't care what you have done to me..."

Saying out loud his hearty feelings, Duan Shun Jie suddenly felt relaxed at once. He tightly held Yan Xi Cheng, feeling a sort of hadn't experienced before happiness.

Already embraced by a man...

It is alright, because he is the one I love.

Even though never crossed his mind that he would be pushed and pressed under another man's body, to occupy this kind of humiliating posture, but because there was an existence of love, he could endure whatever.

The sweet and miserable confession as if reciprocated, Yan Xi Cheng also stretched out his hands to firmly embrace Duan Shun Jie, deeply he kissed him --- they looked like a genuine harmonious couple.

However, except for Yan Xi Cheng himself, nobody knew the actual meaning behind his contained smile that revealed on the corner of his mouth at that moment...

End of The Fallen Hero Chapter 4

Notes

1. High as the mountain and long as the river: far and unreachable.
2. 七情乱 Qi Qing Luan, Qiqing means : the seven human emotions, namely ; joy, anger, sorrow, fear, love, hate

and desire. Luan means: disorder, upheaval. So, literally, Qi qing luan means: all the seven emotions are in disorder.

3. 七步乱情 Qi Bu Luan Qing: Seven emotions in disorder in seven steps.

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 5



luxiufer.livejournal.com/35852.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 5



The sun had set for the day, a day had passed since that fight to death touching stage.

For the whole day, Duan Shun Jie seemed to be in a dream. His heart, his mind, all filled with the affectionate expression on Yan Xi Cheng's extremely beautiful face last night. Everything reminded him on that passionate memory which embarrassed him and made him wish to just die, made his mind be in turbulence, unable to calm down.

Since long ago he had placed all of his heart and his feeling on Yan Xi Cheng. To confront and completely open his heart to welcome him into his life, Duan Shun Jie didn't hesitate in the slightest bit. The fate that brought them together was like a magnificent flower that suddenly burst into bloom in his more than twenty years tranquil like a desert life, making Duan Shun Jie besides being caught unprepared, nervous and flustered, also had this even more difficult to suppress delight.

When it was almost dusk, Duan Shun Jie already couldn't sit still in his tent, fidgety and restless. Yesterday, before parting, he and Yan Xi Cheng had made an appointment to meet at dusk. Even though it wasn't the appointment time yet, his heart already flew to his beloved side since long before. Barely concluded his meeting with all the Vice Generals, Duan Shun Jie untied Cong Yun's halter right after he rushed his way to his tent and prepared himself to go out. Seeing him like that, Chang Er was unable to hide in his astonishment and asked: "General, you don't want to eat?"

"No need. I have a little matter to attend to, you don't have to wait for me this evening, you go to sleep first." With all his might he covered up his jumping for joy heart, Duan Shun Jie enjoined him with the greatest extent of his calm and serene tone.

Speeding along throughout the journey, in no time, the large yard of the Yan's family white walled blue tile house had appeared before his eyes.

At the front of the yard gate, he flew down from his horse. There was already a young attendant who greeted him and took over the reign of his horse, also another one who guided him to Yan Xi Cheng's bedroom.

Pushing open the lightly closed door leaf, Duan Shun Jie was greeted and wrapped around in a pair of strong arms. Surprised, he was about to turn his head to look at the young attendant who guided him to the room, but Yan Xi Cheng was whispering with a low voice in his ears: "Don't mind them! They all understand the rules and are well-behaved."

His cheeks flushed red at once, although the young attendant by his back had retreated with a lowered head and closed the door for them in passing, towards this kind of intimacy, Duan Shun Jie still had a bit of sheepishness and terrified feeling.

Perhaps he could see his sense of shame, Yan Xi Cheng did not speak any further, just lightly dragged his hand and led him to enter the layer upon layer curtained bed, pressing the both of his hands to slowly push him down on the piling up in layers bluish-green bed curtain.

In hoping to make Duan Shun Jie completely realized the reality that he belonged to him, Yan Xi Cheng utilized the utmost leisured pace to slowly strip off his clothing. Looking at the gradually becoming naked Duan Shun Jie, he still didn't have the slightest intention to undress himself. Instead, he fetched the earlier prepared scented oil and poured

it on his hands then smeared it on Duan Shun Jie's back hole.

Gazing fixedly and indulging in Yan Xi Cheng's limpid and beautiful to the extreme pair of eyes, only when Duan Shun Jie felt the finger entering the depth of his inner body that he timidly shifted to break their line of sight. The backyard which only yesterday he found out that it could be used for this kind of thing had been throbbing and having a fit of pang while tightening. The just now about to struggle to resist from Yan Xi Cheng's pressing down assault, was losing will power when his lips were suddenly covered up by him. Slowly, he relaxed his body to allow his fingers to enter deeper inside his body. Unconsciously moaned softly as he took his pair of legs and entangled them on Yan Xi Cheng's waist...

Sensing that the erection under Duan Shun Jie's hip already became hard and stiff to the extent of painful, Yan Xi Cheng stubbornly did not touch the sex organ that had been pressing against his belly. He just minded to delightfully move his fingers in a revolving jerk, to feel that the originally tightly hooped muscle had slowly opened.

"Ahh..." Duan Shun Jie gave a violent jolt from head to toe all of a sudden, the tip of his sex organ was twitching while spitting out a thick white muddy fluid. However, Yan Xi Cheng chose to thrust into his inner body with a sudden force at the moment when he was ejaculating. The originally in the flabbiest limp and the most weakened state body because of this kind of assault became nervous at once, making Duan Shun Jie unable to hold in his surprised cry, the kind of cry that even when he heard of it, his face became red thoroughly.

One of Duan Shun Jie's thigh was lifted and powerfully pressed at his back, Yan Xi Cheng made use of this posture to forcefully push forward, his sex organ compared to the ordinary men was thicker and bigger, now that originally bulkier thing had entered the depth of Duan Shun Jie's rectum, even his intestines could feel the thin friction from the nudged open rubbing feeling, that kind of feeling made Duan Shun Jie felt pained yet excited. His entire person was shivering unceasingly as if he was running a fever. By every of Yan Xi Cheng's pushing forward and pulling out movement, he would let out a soft cry without any awareness.

"Xi Cheng... Xi Cheng..."

Looking at the scarlet face with dazed mind and confused expression of Duan Shun Jie, Yan Xi Cheng stretched out his hand to take off his own clothes and cast them on the floor. He exerted all of his strength to rock his waist.

Duan Shun Jie didn't even find the opportunity to refuse, all of his attention had been seized by the warmth of Yan Xi Cheng's naked body which leaned close to him. Seemingly all of his strength could only be used for experiencing the unceasingly surging up ultimate pleasure. Hysterically panted and gasped for breath, gradually he lost control. All of his mind was as if it could only feel the burning hot place where he and Yan Xi Cheng's interlinking remained with the dense and thick sensation...

When the early morning light shone upon his body to wake him up, only then Duan Shun Jie remembered that last night he actually hadn't even a grain of rice entered his belly. He slept just like that after being intertwined with Yan Xi Cheng until exhausted to the utmost. He couldn't help but shake his head to laugh at his own silly attitude.

"You are leaving now?" Most probably woken up by Duan Shun Jie's movement, Yan Xi Cheng opened his eyes --- even if he hadn't had his early morning washing and dressing up routine, his mind-blowing facial features was still as beautiful as before, beautiful to the point of making people forget to breathe.

The him with no merit and ability, actually was lucky enough to have the chance to know each other and to cherish each other with this celestial being like person, might be because the Heaven took pity on him who was orphaned and helpless since childhood, thereupon bestowed him with this blessing --- Duan Shun Jie was deeply moved, from the bottom of his heart he prayed that every day he could wake up and see Yan Xi Cheng in this kind of gentleness for this lifetime.

"Mm." He nodded his head, although by every means he hated to part with Yan Xi Cheng when they were together,

Duan Shun Jie still didn't dare to forget that he was still the Pingnan Troops Commander-in-Chief, also, at this moment they were in the middle of standing in alert for the enemy troops' confrontation.

"Tonight come a bit earlier, okay?" The delicate and long fingers lightly slid on Duan Shun Jie's waist, deliberately looking at the hidden place which still remained with the trace he left off last night, Yan Xi Cheng revealed a misleading exceptionally beautiful smiling face so much so that it confused the ordinary people in a mundane world.

Even though there was a threadlike hesitation in his eyes, Duan Shun Jie still couldn't resist the charm of Yan Xi Cheng, silently he nodded his head.

Looking at the tall and strong man that had been reduced to a harmless little deer, a threadlike complicated yet crafty expression slipped on Yan Xi Cheng's eyes. Unfortunately, the blinded by love eyes of Duan Shun Jie completely didn't notice it.

After sending Duan Shun Jie off, Yan Xi Cheng returned to his bed to rest for an hour, after that he called the Palace servants to wait on him for washing and dressing routine. He dawdled on another one hour to eat his breakfast, then listlessly rode on the Imperial carriage to go back to Datong's camp.

Once he entered the camp, Pei Jin Tian was already there and urgently greeted him: "Your Highness, just now the spy has reported, yesterday, the Pingnan troops hastily concluded their training after only a little while of training. From what your subject saw, they lack the battle spirit, this will be the best opportunity to lead our army to strike."

Shooting him a sideways glance, Yan Xi Cheng languidly yawned, his tone of speaking was cold and solemn: "When to attack, I have my own calculation. You don't have to talk more. You just have to supervise the officers and soldiers to diligently train on the strategy, when the time has come, I will give the order."

Pei Jin Tian touched his nose dejectedly. Of course he would be unhappy. However, given Yan Xi Cheng's status and his ability to awesomely use the army, he wouldn't dare to go against him.

Yan Xi Cheng couldn't possibly not know that he was unsatisfied, slowly burst forth a laugh: "General Pei don't worry too much. Your dedication, I understand clearly in my heart, after we win this war, I will report to Imperial Father to have you rewarded. Please General Pei bear with me for the time being." Since childhood he was adopted at scheming and very calculating, most understand what to say to wave people's feeling. To win over a General like Pei Jin Tian, of course it would be as easy as blowing off dust.

Originally, towards this youth who was nicknamed "The Cruel Prince", Pei Jin Tian was having a slight ill-feeling. But seeing him to modestly pose a humble attitude towards him, the remaining unpleasant feeling naturally would be reduced by more than half: "Your Highness need no to be so formal. It is Your old subject's duty to be utterly loyal to our country. Seventh Prince awesomely deploys the army, Your old subject naturally would follow your lead, only wishes to win the battle, to quickly wipe out the traitors."

Yan Xi Cheng nodded his head to show his approval, without many words, he turned his body to enter his own tent.

"General... General... General!!!" The getting louder and louder shout by his ear side finally called back Duan Shun Jie who had been severely absent-minded. It was after a period of time when he realized that the whole army had completed their training. They were standing as a sign of respect while expecting him to give another order.

Although every time he faced the incomprehensible expression of Chang Er he would feel guilty from the bottom of his heart, Duan Shun Jie still had no way to resist Yan Xi Cheng's touching intonation when he asked for an appointment. He would always choose to quietly leave the campsite on dusk, and would always drag his extremely spent body back at dawn.

For more than ten days he had been rushing about like this, even a strong as iron man would be unable to keep this

up. In addition, every night, Yan Xi Cheng's limitless desire would seriously overspend his physical strength. So, no wonder that Duan Shun Jie unexpectedly would be absentmindedly drowsy during the crucial training of the whole army.

Honestly, with no courage to face the subordinates' eyes that whether looking at him with their suspicion or doubting him, Duan Shun Jie hastily issued an order to conclude the training, superficially treading with his practically walking on the cloud and mist's step to return to his tent.

Watching Duan Shun Jie with his muddled and sleepy face paralyzed on the chair, the following him from behind Vice General Rong, finally couldn't hold in his question and asked with his anxious tone: "General, these past few days, are you feeling unwell? In every training, your face was so pale. The soldiers have been wondering whether you have been contracting a foul disease. This way will certainly shake the morale of the army..."

Duan Shun Jie waved his hand to indicate that he needn't to continue talking, he himself already knew that he couldn't continue to indulge himself in Yan Xi Cheng's warmth every night, yet he couldn't resist the temptation of the sweet forbidden fruit. Countless time he intended to tell Yan Xi Cheng that he wanted to have a rest for several nights, but once he made contact with those lovely eyes, he would be reluctant to leave the touching eyes and then the words would be swallowed back.

Secretly made a determination that he couldn't go on like this anymore, Duan Shun Jie straightened up his posture and said: "Rest assured Vice General Rong. I have my own calculation."

Although still wore a concerned face, Vice General Rong still chose to believe this youngest yet having the most meritorious achievement, the most splendid General. He nodded his head no longer pursuing the matter.

At night time, when he entered the very room where he intimately spent the nights with Yan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie hesitated over and over again before he finally decided to confess to Yan Xi Cheng.

"Xi Cheng..."

Yan Xi Cheng was welcoming him with his usual smiling face, the seemingly delicate and long but extremely powerful arms pushed him to sit on an old-fashioned wooden armchair by his side, firmly bumped his lips against him, causing Duan Shun Jie to stop his yet to say words and blocked it in his throat.

"Shun Jie, a minute of spring night is worth of thousand pieces of gold. If you have something to say, save it for later." Whispering with voice brimming with bewitching charm on Duan Shun Jie's ear, Yan Xi Cheng wantonly tossed about and sucked on his mouth, his other hand had pulled open Duan Shun Jie's front clothes.

Although the wooden armchair was spacious, but it still couldn't fit for two tall and big grown up men. Duan Shun Jie was pressed to the point he could only struggle to face upwards. Yan Xi Cheng still unceasingly forced and pressed forward. Forcing his way with his saliva, pressed him and made him unable to breathe.

The extreme lack of oxygen causing Duan Shun Jie became entirely dizzy and muddle-headed. In his misty feeling he could feel that Yan Xi Cheng had taken off his trousers, spreading his both legs and put them up on the chair's armrest. The tender part between his legs had been rubbed by Yan Xi Cheng's erection. The pink soft flesh unceasingly twitched, shrinking and contracting as if waiting for the swelling sex organ under his hip to enter.

Taking Duan Shun Jie's both hands to put on his back while recklessly kissing him, Yan Xi Cheng purposely didn't put his already accumulated scorching hot power to thrust in his inner body, but only continuously twist and swing a little part of his front rear on the entrance, letting the sensitive skin of Duan Shun Jie's entrance could feel him, the movement was unable to comfort the readily to greet him place.

"Xi Cheng..." Hearing that Duan Shun Jie was calling out with his heavy gasp filled with faint and already unable to

hold back his pant, Yan Xi Cheng indistinctly pleased with himself for the result of his training on the body for these several days. He could clearly see that Duan Shun Jie's body already could not be without his embrace anymore, he almost could see the triumph's waving hand towards his direction.

"What? What do you want me to do? Say it. If you don't say, how would I know?"

Wickedly brought the front end of his manhood and slightly thrust in a little to the passionate entrance then immediately pulled it out in a very fast movement, Yan Xi Cheng restrained with all his might his own impulse to quickly charge and thrust himself in. Actually the tip of his manhood was already so hungry and thirsty to the point of seeping out a sparkling translucent obscene fluid. He merely slightly leaned forward to dye Duan Shun Jie's whole anus with his lewd liquid, but not at all entering his body.

"Xi Cheng..." Duan Shun Jie as if shrieked miserably. His entire body had gone limp not even able to extort a little of his physical strength. But his body which already was accustomed to Yan Xi Cheng's thrusting because it couldn't obtain that manhood to fill in felt hollow and unbearably twitching without stopping, as if calling out to him to quickly lay down his weapon and surrender.

Yan Xi Cheng was unwilling to give up. Simply increasing his effort to grind on his outer part, the skillful and nimble tongue and teeth also unceasingly tantalized and bit Duan Shun Jie's stood upright nipple that had become bright red.

"Xi Cheng, come in... Yours, come in..." In the end he couldn't fight the torment of his desire anymore, Duan Shun Jie completely let go of his self-esteem, saying out loud the desire from the bottom of his heart.

"Darling, What do you want to come in? Come in to where? How would I know if you don't say it clearly!" Yan Xi Cheng was coldly laugh in his heart, but his mouth remained unwilling to let go.

"... I ... I want your thing... your thing to... to come inside me..." Duan Shun Jie also couldn't believe that he was actually immoral to this extent, even these kinds of words he could say it out loud. After saying out the words with much difficulty, he was thinking to lash a slap on his own face.

Stimulated by the words, he could no longer exercise patience anymore. Duan Shun Jie was as if found a complete liberation the moment Yan Xi Cheng entered his body. The sex organ between the two naked bodies was jerking as it pouring out white turbid substance. Following that gradually weakened sex organ, Yan Xi Cheng began to rock his hip in a front and back movement.

That pushing up enormous thing which completely filled the cramped corridor was making Duan Shun Jie feel both anguish and pleasure. He himself already couldn't tell actually what kind of feeling was that slight pain mixed with extreme pleasure about. He could only close both his eyes to resist Yan Xi Cheng's more faster and more stronger ramming. He could only feel that that thing inside his body was growing bigger and hotter. Finally, along with Yan Xi Cheng's one last powerful thrust, he shot in all of his hot semen inside his body...

"Excellent! Shun Jie, your inside is truly excellent!" Yan Xi Cheng was still in a bliss, he didn't immediately pull out from Duan Shun Jie's inner body, instead he tightly hugged him and slowly waited for their heartbeat and breathing spell to be calm down.

The most painful moment in anal intercourse was not when the entering and the sliding in and out kind of time, rather it was the instant when the sex organ was pulled out.

Sensing that Duan Shun Jie's gradually cooling down corridor had started to contract, Yan Xi Xheng also leisurely began to pull out in a very slow motion. He deliberately delayed the process, to ensure that every sensitive fold and crease of Duan Shun Jie could feel his manhood during the slow pulling out moment. Lastly, when he was passing the sphincter, he pulled it out altogether, unexpectedly heard a muffled groan from Duan Shun Jie who was still in

the crook of his arm.

Didn't even have the time to complain against Yan Xi Cheng's mischievous conduct, Duan Shun Jie was already hoisted in a bridal style and brought to the bed. He could feel that Yan Xi Cheng's slender and long icy-cold's fingers suddenly poked and entered his lower body entrance which still hadn't had the chance to close properly. Without waiting for his response, there were already three fingers intruding in. Yan Xi Cheng constantly repeated his rotating and spreading gesture.

"What are you doing..." The tight and delicate inner muscle slowly regained its tightness from its flabby condition, but suddenly poked open again, that kind of pain was no different from being stabbed by sword or spear.

Yan Xi Cheng was wearing an innocent face: "Shun Jie, I only intend to draw out the thing inside you, I am worried that you might suffer from diarrhea."

From the manner of speaking, the whole action was completely for the sake of his partner, but it actually contained Yan Xi Cheng's sinister motive. He had secretly asked the inner palace private doctor, this kind of unceasingly spreading action which not allowing the muscle a time to recover could create the ultimate flabby aftermath consequences. He actually wanted to use this little underhanded method to make the unaware body of Duan Shun Jie to become a totally different constitution from common men, to become a body which couldn't make it without the embrace and a thrust in of a man.

Totally unaware of Yan Xi Cheng's treacherous intention, Even though Duan Shun Jie felt the ultimate out of sorts from his inner part being scratched and rubbed like this, he could only clench his teeth to resist with great difficulty. He was afraid to brush away his beloved's kind intention.

Using his fingers to move back and fro in Duan Shun Jie's backyard and intimately played in that part for a period of time, Yan Xi Cheng finally felt that his tired and weakened lower part had regained afresh vitality. Without changing his expression he drew his fingers out, with the moist left behind from the before joyous entangled, in one thrust he entered Duan Shun Jie again.

Thus, this kind of action repeated itself in endless cycles. Yan Xi Cheng would meticulously delay the time of taking out after the ejaculation, after taking out would repeatedly use his fingers to expand Duan Shun Jie's inner wall, waiting for the time until he regained his vitality then vigorously tangled with Duan Shun Jie again. Just like this, as if not in the least needed any rest, he tormented Duan Shun Jie for the entire night.

"Nghh..." Contently looking at Duan Shun Jie's slightly open backyard revealing the crimson soft and tender flesh containing white semen in it, with a look of barely had any breath left, Yan Xi Cheng was lethargic like a cat that had been fully fed. Hearing that Duan Shun Jie was calling out his name, he merely listlessly rolled to the side, then secured Duan Shun Jie's waist in his arm, sliding his hand to gently caress him in up and down movement.

"I... I have an important thing to deal with in this couple days, starting from tomorrow, I won't be able to come for a while..." Stretching his head, there was a knife. Shrinking back his head, there was also a knife. Being in the middle of two tight and difficult choices, Duan Shun Jie finally determinedly decided to temporarily absence from Yan Xi Cheng. But upon Yan Xi Cheng's sudden severe expression, he was frightened for a while, didn't dare to state his reason.

Earlier he was showing an unable to believe expression, soon after that he changed to a about to tear up expression --- looking at that translucent water drop dripping from Yan Xi Cheng's pair of matchless eyes, Duan Shun Jie felt a fit of unable to restrain heartache at once, he couldn't help but stretch out his hand to pull him and seize him in his bosom.

"Shun Jie, you actually don't want me anymore... right?" Burying his head in Duan Shun Jie's embrace, nobody could see the faint wicked smile floating at the corner at Yan Xi Cheng's mouth. "I know that you mind about me and

you being the same gender, but I really think that we are truly in love with each other...”

The main subject as if choked by the tears, all of a sudden Duan Shun Jie couldn't help but be more pained to the extreme because of this.

Why in the world didn't he want to forever indulge himself in this honeymoon like happy life with Yan Xi Cheng? However, reality had always been cruel. He was not only a man who loved Yan Xi Cheng, but he also had to bear the heavy responsibility to overthrow Datong's tyranny ruler, he had to maintain the hundred thousand lives of the Pingnan soldiers and officials on his shoulders. He couldn't just drown himself to death in the land of warmth and tenderness, to be drowned in the embrace of Yan Xi Cheng.

“Xi Cheng...” He was about to open his mouth to explain about his own difficulty, but he was strongly shoved to the side by Yan Xi Cheng.

“Go! Just go! You just go now! Several days ago my father had sent another letter asking me to hide to the outer side of the mountain, also said that he will arrange a marriage for me to carry on our family line. I gave him a thousand ways and a hundred plans as my excuses, I thought that since now I have you, how could I possibly marry another woman, but who would have thought that today you would actually be the first to say that you don't want me anymore... You... You you... You are such a cruel person!” Imitating the expression of the copulate women he used to see since his childhood, Yan Xi Cheng performed in an excellent voice and expression, he almost couldn't restrain himself for giving an applaud for his performance.

As the result, Duan Shun Jie was unbearably saddened by his mournful content of speech. Holding Yan Xi Cheng in his arms, he wished that he could dig out his heart and show it to him: “Xi Cheng, I absolutely have no intention to break up with you just like this, honestly, this is my last resort...”

“Last resort? What kind of situation do you have to make you have no choice at all...” Yan Xi Cheng step by step pressed hard on the subject. He was set to corner Duan Shun Jie to the point of no more space to move back circumstance. Duan Shun Jie heaved a long sigh, knowing that if today he didn't come clean, certainly he wouldn't be able to pacify Yan Xi Cheng. Deep in his heart he was anxious and fearful that after Yan Xi Cheng learnt about his status, whether or not his attitude would change, unable to restrain his helplessly hesitating expression from showing up.

Holding back his impulse to laugh, Yan Xi Cheng pressed harder and asked: “Quickly tell me! You didn't say anything, how can I possibly trust you!”

“I... I actually, I am the Commander-in-Chief of Pingnan's Troops.” Carrying the determination of death, Duan Shun Jie honestly confessed his actual status. Surprisingly he realized that Yan Xi Cheng's face was not even showing a surprised expression at all.

“What? You... You have already known?” It was as if Duan Shun Jie was somewhat the most surprised one.

Yan Xi Cheng softly laughed, said: “Stupid! This Mount Panlong is a battlefield, there weren't anyone who dared to breakthrough. From earlier I already could guess, if you are not from Datong's army, then you must be from Pingnan's army, only never have guessed that you actually are Pingnan's army's Commander-in-Chief.”

Looks like Yan Xi Cheng's response was not as severe as he had imagined, Duan Shun Jie unwittingly let out a relieved sigh: “Since it is like this, you have known that for me to choose to temporarily part with you is something that I am forced to do without a choice... Wait until after I put Datong's army to flee, I will definitely come to fetch you at Jinling, we will rest and fly together, never again to be separated.”

Yan Xi Cheng seemingly was seriously considering his words, quite a while later he revealed his tender and beautiful touching expression, gazing straight at Duan Shun Jie, his eyes showed his sincere grief.

Duan Shun Jie still hadn't enough time to say anything but reassuring, Yan Xi Cheng already opened his mouth to plead: "Shun Jie, I really can't give you up. You have to come again for the last time tomorrow night. If I can connect with you for one more night, the next day I will leave Mount Panlong, whole-heartedly waiting for you to force the enemy to flee and after that come to fetch me, alright?"

The lingering meaning of words was completely filled with the melancholy of unwilling to let go and part with the beloved one. Although fully understanding that if he delayed for one more day, the danger would be increased by more, but how could Duan Shun Jie heartlessly refuse the sorrowful plead by his lover. Taking into account that these days the Datong army wasn't making any move, even if he dragged on for another day, it wouldn't be of much problems. In the end, he nodded his head in agreement.

Most probably because the forced parting was fast approaching, Yan Xi Cheng seized him and affectionately being intimate again. His movement as if exceedingly vigorous and rough. When Duan Shun Jie raised his body to prepare to leave, he felt that his waist's joint was as if had been dislocated from the bending and twisting. He spent a good amount of strength striving to wash and dress himself neatly.

"Shun Jie, don't forget about tonight. We won't leave before seeing each other..." Just before he stepped out the door, Yan Xi Cheng still didn't forget to faintly tell him. Duan Shun Jie felt the hard to bear sadness, repeatedly nodded to agree, after reluctantly looking back for two or three times, he shoved the door and left.

Hearing the echoed sound of Duan Shun Jie's galloping away to the mountain in the early morning, the flirtatious sweet and charming expression on Yan Xi Cheng's face turned to the severely stern one. He completely climbed out of the bed, then shouted: "Someone, quickly come! Hasten to deliver my order, the whole army to be on alert, get ready to attack tonight!"

The physical strength was as if already being spent to the utmost limit. From the Yan's family Manor, urging his horse to dash back to Pingnan's campsite, upon dismounted from his horse, Duan Shun Jie felt that in front of his eyes was a layer of blackness. He could only muster his utmost willpower to withstand the fatigued signal given by his body.

Striding with tired and sleepy steps, he entered his own tent, the first thing to greet him was the disapproving looks of Chang Er.

But the Duan Shun Jie now honestly had no power to explain to him, he could only walk rapidly for several steps then tumbled on the chair by the side.

"General, these several days, where have you actually been to? Your face color is so unsightly." Hesitating for quite some time, Chang Er finally couldn't restrain himself from asking.

"Chang Er, please don't ask anymore..." His head was dizzy and muddled, perhaps due to extreme exhaustion, Duan Shun Jie truthfully couldn't draw out any unnecessary mood to answer him.

"General!" Chang Er was seemed to have something more to say, but looking at Duan Shun Jie waved his hand to dismiss him, he could only swallow back the bellyful words he wanted to say, turning his body and left the tent.

Leaning on the chair for a while, Duan Shun Jie saw that the sky was already so bright, he could only brace himself to stand up, then walked to the tent in the center of the camp.

"General." Seeing Duan Shun Jie stepped in, Rong Vice General and the others stopped the things they were discussing and came to greet him.

"Datong's side has made any movement?" Duan Shun Jie sat on the chair and asked them.

"Report, General, for the time being, there is no movement."

How weird... Pei Jin Tian rarely exercised this kind of patience.

Carefully researched on Pei Jin Tian's usual practice on battle, Duan Shun Jie couldn't recall that he had a record for holding back his troops without moving for this long.

It is good too, wish that he will hold his troops for another day before moving... Duan Shun Jie was very doubtful that if the Datong's army was about to attack now whether or not he would have sufficient strength to command the battle.

He himself clearly understood that he shouldn't go on like this to indulge himself in the taboo game with Yan Xi Cheng. However, since the very first meeting, all of the ecstasy of love had drowned all of his rationality. Completely forgot the cruelty of reality, forgot that he was still glaring each other like a tiger watching his prey poised for battle with the enemy army, could only forget himself and got carried away, throwing himself into the gentle smiling's face and luscious embrace.

Tonight would be the last time he pampered himself in this self-indulgent.

Duan Shun Jie knew that he absolutely may not indulge in this kind of sensual pleasures, illicit sexual relations. But that kind of insanity upon the thought of meeting with Yan Xi Cheng, the impulse to tightly embrace each other with him always made his chest surge with turbulent waves. Once he remembered that after tonight, the both of them had to temporarily part with each other, a stream of nameless, indescribable pain of separation fluctuated in his heart, making him unable to help but have both longing and fearful for dusk to befall.

Under the disapproving eyes of the Vice Generals he hastily ordered to conclude the training. Even though Datong's army unusual long bidding time was causing Duan Shun Jie to have this kind of something-was-off kind of feeling. However, the him now was fully occupied to have time to take into consideration that perilous message, he only minded to hurriedly arrived to his beloved's side a bit earlier, so that he would have more time to stay together with him.

"Chang Er. If Rong Vice General and the others come to find me, just tell them that I am taking a stroll in the mountain. You also don't have to wait for me. Just go to sleep early." Facing the creasing eyebrows of Chang Er, Duan Shun Jie couldn't restrain but have this guilty conscience. Conveniently reasoned to himself that this would be their very last meeting.

Urging the reins, the person was still on his way, but his heart since long ago had sped up towards the still faraway manor of Yan's family.

In a spell of time, the extended large blue tile was projected in front of his eyes. A fit of joyous gushing from Duan Shun Jie's heart, causing him to hasten his dismount movement, then accelerating his pace to go forward.

"Xi Cheng!" Full of joy and expectations, he excitedly went straight to Yan Xi Cheng's sleeping room. All the way the normally always had young maidens and servant boys coming and forth courtyard was particularly tranquil today, Duan Shun Jie didn't give it much thoughts.

"Xi Cheng, I have come!" Pushing the room's door, inside the room was an extreme of quietness. The furniture and goods were still at the usual position, on the table, a half-read book was tossed just like that, it was as if the owner when leaving considered to return in a short time.

"Xi Cheng?" An ominous premonition slowly and quietly crawled up from the bottom of Duan Shun Jie's heart, yet he still refused to believe that Yan Xi Cheng would fail to keep his promise to meet with him. Turning his head and charging into another corner and nook of the manor ---- is it possible that Yan Xi Cheng is pulling a joke on him?

"Xi Cheng! Yan Xi Cheng! Xi Cheng, where are you?!" Desperately calling out to him, but seemingly there was only

his own voice echoing in the absolutely deserted courtyard.

The servants' quarter, the kitchen, the anteroom, the backyard... Everywhere was extremely quiet, but the traces and marks which left behind was indicating that the residents were leaving in a hurry, it was like during sunset a tremendous problem had happened, forcing the manor's residents to leave without have the time to get things and luggage ready.

"Xi Cheng..." Sweat was rolling down from Duan Shun Jie's forehead. He didn't understand, didn't understand Yan Xi Cheng had actually met what kind of problem, to make him unable to fulfill his promise like this, and just disappeared in a rush...

"Xi Cheng... Xi Cheng..." Murmuring the only name that lingered in his heart at this moment, Duan Shun Jie realized that he actually knew nothing about his lover. He only knew that his name was Yan Xi Cheng, only knew that he had a father who was engaged in a trade business somewhere else. Apart from these, he knew nothing at all about him.

In this vast and wide world, given his knowledge about him, where should he go to search for him?

As if he went insane, he searched time and again, circled the manor for several times, before he finally acknowledged that Yan Xi Cheng had left without leaving behind even a word, really had already disappeared from him.

His chest was throbbing in pain to the point of unable to breathe extent, Duan Shun Jie powerlessly sat in the corridor of Yan Xi Cheng's bedroom, his pair of hands was hugging his knee and curling up into a ball.

He felt that the whole world had crumbled...

Even though from the time knowing Yan Xi Cheng until now it was barely a month, however the alone and lonely for a long time heart of Duan Shun Jie since earlier had regarded him as his closest person in this world. He had lost both his parents since young. Though the King of Pingnan who brought him up extremely loved him as his own child, Duan Shun Jie towards him could only feel deeply indebted and respected him both as his teacher and his father, never had admired and adored whomever like he adored Yan Xi Cheng. Merely parting from him for a moment, he already felt an extreme sorrowful aching like he was about to die.

Xi Cheng, where are you?

He would rather believe that he had abandoned his appointment with him. No matter what, he didn't dare to think about the possibilities that Yan Xi Cheng had encountered a mishap. However, this disappearance without leaving behind even a word, letting Duan Shun Jie unable to explain to himself to ease up his anxiety and worry.

Didn't know how long he had been sitting in front of Yan Xi Cheng's room, it was the sudden noise of battle drums and horn sounds from the quiet mountain ridge that brought Duan Shun Jie back from his endless distressed world.

The disorder and chaotic trains of thoughts caused Duan Shun Jie to basically not have enough time to find out what exactly had happened, but his intuition as a soldier had made him jump with the fastest pace to mount Cong Yun, madly urged his horse's reins to rush back as fast as possible to the campsite.

The faint battling shout and the dense scent of blood passing through from the air made the shadow in his heart become more and more vivid. But along the way, there were no few traces of destruction on the only bridge and road on his way back, causing him to waste twice the time he needed to rush back, compared to the time when he came, to the Pingnan's camp which stationed on the mountain valley.

Gazing from a high place and seeing the battlefield situation, Duan Shun Jie's heart grew cold to the soles of his feet.

The not in the least prepared and without the Commander-in-Chief to lead Pingnan's troops, facing the surprise attack from Datong's army, was like a fish on a chopping block. The formerly prepared numerous battle array formations and traps entirely had no chance to be used. The many people who had been broken up and scattered by the cavalry, even had no time to pick up their weapon had already cut down by the long sword of the Datong's soldiers.

The entire campsite was seemingly filled with the dress in dark yellow military uniform Datong's soldiers all over the places. The Pingnan troops were already scattered in a disposition of formation. Only left several groups of people which still tenaciously stood up to the assault.

The horrible scene that unfolded in front of his eyes made Duan Shun Jie as if gave up his rationality. Urging his horse like crazy charged in to the battlefield. He grabbed his long sword, faced forward and killed the blocking the way Datong's soldiers.

The ordinary soldiers could not block his brave and fierce attack, The Datong's soldiers in front on Duan Shun Jie one by one fell down, just like that, simply killed by him to open up his drenched by blood pathway, until he arrived at the place under the banner of Pingnan's troops.

"General!" Rong Vice General completely in a difficult situation, he had lost his formerly wise and farsighted, calm and collected self since long ago. Upon the sight of Duan Shun Jie, he dashed towards him with almost crying voice. "General, where have you been?! Datong suddenly launches a surprise attack. No matter how, we couldn't find you, a host of dragons without a head, everybody was unable to shoulder the responsibility!"

Duan Shun Jie's heart was already in disorder, how could he face him and explain about his whereabouts. The troops had been beaten in total collapse, even if Kong Ming[1] was here, very likely he would also find it difficult to turn over today's losing battle.

In a panic he lifted his head to look at all direction. The showing off Golden Dragon banner of Datong's side on the middle of the mountain as if taunting him, flying upward in the wind. Under the banner was a multitude distinct colored armors of Datong clustering around to escort a man with magnificent golden armor who stood in the middle.

"This war is actually commanded by Datong's Seventh Prince. He has always been good in scheming, skillful in surprise attacks. If from earlier we know that he is the one in command for this war, we would be able to warn General to be careful for a surprise attack." Most probably he noticed Duan Shun Jie's line of vision, Rong Vice General with his trembling voice explained to him, "General, quick give a retreat order! If not, I'm afraid that the brothers wouldn't be able to hold up for any longer!"

Looking at the soldiers who dressed up in Pingnan's uniforms one by one fell down, the surrounding him several soldiers and officials also might not be able to hold out for a long time, Duan Shun Jie knew that even if he gave them an order to retreat, it would be hard to have them come back alive.

It was because of his leaving his post without permission that created this losing battle, moreover, the disappearance of Yan Xi Cheng letting Duan Shun Jie seemed like sinking into the frenzied predicament.

Taking by force a bow from the archer by his side, Duan Shun Jie put an arrow and drew the bow, pointed it at the direction of that magnificent golden armor.

"You quickly give the order to retreat! I will cover the retreat!" A General was not in a position to run away. Rather than escape, return to Jinling and faced the blaming eyes of everybody, Duan Shun Jie would rather to die here and now in the battlefield.

Concentrating his inner strength on the arrow on the bowstring, the pace of the arrow was of the fastest piercing through the sky towards the leader of Datong. Ordinary bow and arrow absolutely wouldn't have this kind of far

range, but this arrow was infused with Duan Shun Jie's whole inner power, it was flying towards that person in golden armor as if it had the help from God.

Watching the arrow was about to shoot the target, Duan Shun Jie and his men as if could hear the crying out in alarm of Pei Jin Tian's men. At the time of life and death, that person in golden armor actually caught the arrow barehanded, gave it a glance, then threw it to the ground like it was nothing.

"General, quickly go!" Dragging the revealing an extreme extent of shocked expression's Duan Shun Jie to retreat, Rong Vice General was obviously desperate to protect him and take him to leave.

The war had come to the point that Pingnan's troops had utterly defeated and failed, he couldn't let Pingnan's most powerful General to commit another mistake, even if half of the reason they suffered this defeat basically could be blamed on the General's leaving the post without permission.

"I won't go! I can't just runaway like this!" The extremity guilty conscience mixed with the deep grieve of losing his most beloved, the Duan Shun Jie now had truly given up any wishes to stay alive. He could only think about killing the enemy's General to redeem his own wrongdoing.

Seeing that Duan Shun Jie now was unable to be reasoned with words, Rong Vice General hardened his heart and strike with his palm the side of Duan Shun Jie's neck. Propping up the already fainted Duan Shun Jie, with the guards who surrounding them, they began to move back and retreat.

"Your Highness..." The Pei Jin Tian who was observing the battlefield situation from beginning to end, of course would notice the movement tendency of the Pingnan's leaders. He wanted to remind Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to dispatch the pursuing soldiers. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng only waved his hand, to hint that he would let Vice General Rong and the others to flee and not pursue them any further, completely ignoring the expression of disappointment and surprise on Pei Jin Tian's face.

What could be done if Duan Shun Jie died today? His meticulousness of war deployment was not something that could be concluded just like this.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 5.

Notes:

1.) Kong Ming: Also known as Zhuge Liang, a military leader during the Three Kingdoms period, in the fictional 'Romance of Three Kingdoms' he was portrayed as a sage and military genius. In Chinese folklore, he became a symbol of resourcefulness and wisdom.

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 6



luxiufer.livejournal.com/36495.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 6



"General, The Lord sends someone to tell you to go there this evening."

"Mm." Sitting on the chair and gazing out the window in a daze, Duan Shun Jie nodded his head, not even turning his head to glance at Chang Er who was coming to pass the order. It was as if his soul since long ago had drowned into the scenery outside the window, his body was not nothing more than an empty body.

After the utterly bad defeat at Mount Panlong, Pingnan's troops had suffered very heavy damage. Without a doubt the numerous people who had been jealous of Ouyang Fa De's doted on Duan Shun Jie would be unrestrained in accusing his misconduct in leaving his post without permission during the war, and also, according to the military law, the punishment for this kind of heavy crime should have to be beheading. Unexpectedly, Ouyang Fa De did not at all conduct a further investigation, only ordered to temporarily remove him from his official post in the military, punished him to shut himself in the house and to reflect on his mistakes.

But Duan Shun Jie seemingly had lost all of his vitality on Mount Panlong. Facing the numerous people's envy, hostility, sympathy he didn't react at all. He only sat in a daze like this day in and day out. The people thought that he was like that because he felt extremely guilty and ashamed so that he lost his soul and dropped his spirit. Nobody guessed that his desperate state was caused by the unexpected separation with his lover.

Yan Xi Cheng seemingly vanished just like that from Duan Shun Jie's life, just like his abrupt appearance, it was as if this person had never existed in this world.

Duan Shun Jie had asked someone to make some inquiries about the Yan's Family, the people around there said that the manor had been abandoned for quite a long while, never heard that there was a family surnamed Yan lived there before.

Perhaps, a beauty like Xi Cheng actually was not part of this mundane world. It was merely his own wishful thinking as an ordinary man to insist on a predestined relationship which did not belong to him, to the point that he even involved the numerous Generals and soldiers of Pingnan's troops to take his place in suffering the heavenly punishment.

The originally didn't believe in Gods also didn't believe in destiny Duan Shun Jie couldn't help but begin to have a wild imagination. He intended to take the ultimately thickened joy and agony of the encounter then blame it as the will of Heaven.

What a man ought to accomplish, what was called as pursuing glory, splendor, wealth and rank1...

All of the ambitious desire to beat others' intentions seemingly had disappeared from Duan Shun Jie's life altogether with the defeat and the disappearance of Yan Xi Cheng. Countless time he deeply regretted that he couldn't die on the Mount Panlong's war. Probably, that way he didn't have to bear this moment's beating heart piercing bones kind of agony. Sitting while watching the sun rise and the moon sink, Duan Shun Jie could only feel that the life without Yan Xi Cheng to accompany him would be very long as well as meaningless.

When will it end...

"General, There is a young master outside saying he wants to meet you."

Sitting in a daze by himself in front of the window for didn't know how long, Chang Er once again knocked on his room's door.

"Tell him I don't want to meet him." Duan Shun Jie didn't want to meet anybody no matter who they were, except for the man whom already impossible to appear in front of him.

The heart that at the beginning wholeheartedly believed and searched in confident, at this moment already discouraged and downhearted, there no longer existed whatever trusting thread of luck.

"He said his surname is Yan, that you are a good friend of his..."

The door was hastily being pushed open, Chang Er had never seen this kind of expression on Duan Shun Jie's face before --- It was like his whole self in an instant regained a new life, the joy and delight as if he had gone mad and the unable to believe expression. He didn't even have the time to clearly see, Duan Shun Jie already brushed pass from his side to go straight to the front room.

"Xi Cheng! Xi Cheng! Heaven! It is really you!"

Duan Shun Jie truly couldn't describe his feeling at the moment. The moment when he saw Yan Xi Cheng's graceful and brimming with laughter's beautiful face, seemingly the sun suddenly shone on his gloomy and desperate heart, causing him to feel that his life in this split second had brightened up to the point of dazzling.

"Xi Cheng!"

"Shun Jie." Compared to Duan Shun Jie's excitement, Yan Xi Cheng appeared to be a lot calmer. He was wearing simple clothing, there were also no attendants by his side, his face reflected the tiredness and sleepiness of rushing from far distance.

Although this place was the front room for receiving a guest, although this place had the danger of being caught in the act by other people, Duan Shun Jie was unable to stop his impulse to tightly embrace Yan Xi Cheng --- if he didn't do this, he was afraid that he could explode.

With much difficulty coaxing Duan Shun Jie to calm down, Yan Xi Cheng signaled him to take him to his own room, so as to avoid doing anything out of ordinary under the public gaze.

"Xi Cheng, why did you suddenly leave? I went to find you but the people said they have never heard of a Yan family!" Taking Yan Xi Cheng back to his own bedroom, closing the door, Duan Shun Jie directly pestered on Yan Xi Cheng demanding an explanation from him.

Yan Xi Cheng's face was a layer of calmness. After elegantly sitting himself he just slowly said : "That day after you left, my father was coming. Didn't know who told him about you and me, he immediately returned that night to take me with him. Of course I didn't comply, but he ordered the servants to forcefully take me to go with him. I had to desperately find a chance to escape and runaway."

Even if this was only a very few sentences, Duan Shun Jie was able to imagine Yan Xi Cheng's pain for the sake to be with him to have broken the relations with his own family. His entire heart was touched in an instant. Stretching his hand to hug Yan Xi Cheng firmly, he could only feel that no matter how much the love he used up to love him, it would never be enough.

"You have really gone through so much trouble..."

"As for why the surrounding people didn't know about my family, most probably because we haven't actually resided in that house for a long time yet, maybe they still didn't know." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's manner of speaking was very natural when he explained, even the slightest bit of hesitation couldn't be seen on his face.

"I am sorry, Shun Jie. You must have been very worried about me. I have heard about you too. Don't blame me! I... I don't have a home anymore now. If you don't want me, I really don't have any place to go to." Yan Xi Cheng was earnestly, charmingly and pitifully leaning close to Duan Shun Jie's chest while telling his story in low voice.

He had made an oath to his Imperial Father that within a year he would surely break Pingnan. Also, Duan Shun Jie on Mount Panlong's battle had committed such a great mistake but unexpectedly hadn't been called to account for his fault, Ouyang Fa De obviously regarded him higher than what people had expected. This had strengthened Yan Xi Cheng's determination to use their relationship to beat Pingnan to its fall from inside.

"You also have no choice, how can I blame you! I... Aside from you, I don't care for anything." The usually sickening and disgusting talk at this time was pouring down in torrents like the flow of water. Duan Shun Jie didn't care at all, because this was his sincerest thoughts from the deepest part of his heart, he was not even the least bit afraid to let Yan Xi Cheng know.

"Stupid. Aren't we together now?" Inwardly sneering at Duan Shun Jie who was truly a fool and an idiot, Yan Xi Cheng's face didn't forget to reveal a moved expression.

Thinking to himself, his mouth was speaking, Yan Xi Cheng's hand also did not stay idle, snatched a moment to lightly untie Duan Shun Jie's sash on his waist.

"Xi Cheng, why you..." Never had thoughts that Yan Xi Cheng would be this impatient, Duan Shun Jie's face flushed red at once. However, to face the separated for a longtime lover, no matter what, he didn't have the heart to resist. Could only yield to his taking the liberty to undress him, then brought him to topple on the bed behind him.

It was like a scene of a very long erotic spring dream.

"Xi Cheng... Xi Cheng..." Calling out his lover's name like in a dream, Duan Shun Jie already lost count on how many times Yan Xi Cheng entered his body, he only knew that when they met, it was still midday, and at this time, the sky's color outside the window had turned to dusk. The two people just like that continuously for several hours entangled themselves, the entire bedroom had been filled with the scent of sweat and lust.

"Shun Jie, you have thinned a great deal..." Exerting his power to rock his waist again and again bumped into Duan Shun Jie's hot and passionate body, Yan Xi Cheng could feel that the body in his bosom had thinned a great deal.

That was caused by the couldn't be dispersed longing and unstable mealtime.

Even if his heart clearly understood the cause, how could Duan Shun Jie have the nerve to say it out loud. At the present, bearing the posture of accepting a man from behind during their sexual intercourse already made him feel extremely ashamed to show his face, if in this posture he was to pour out every longing in his mind, he was afraid that he might be ashamed to death.

"Doesn't... doesn't matter... As long as you don't mind me getting fat, this little flesh... will grow back in no time... Ahhh...." The latest cry in surprise was not related to the matter he talked about, that was because Yan Xi Cheng suddenly increased his ramming rhythm as well as drained off his desire inside his body.

"Shun Jie! Shun Jie!" Perhaps caused by parting for long time reason, Yan Xi Cheng tonight was particularly frantic. Already lost count for how many times he had climaxed inside Duan Shun Jie's body, within a brief moment after he took it out, his stood upright erection was grinding on his entrance again.

Maybe due to not haven done this for long, Duan Shun Jie was actually unable to really enjoy it. Desperately tried to resist Yan Xi Cheng who still wanted to push his tip to enter his body, he was nearly begging for mercy: "Xi Cheng, I beg you... Don't do anymore... I cannot anymore... so painful..."

From the deepest part of his body to the pit of his stomach, there was this kind of bloated feeling. Duan Shun Jie felt

that if he was being entered one more time he most probably would vomit then and there. However, looking at Yan Xi Cheng's expression that was about to weep, he truly couldn't let him be disappointed.

Without giving it much ponder, he turned his body, almost without any hesitation he opened his mouth and took Yan Xi Cheng's erected desire into his mouth and sucked it.

In that split second, a threadlike complicated expression flashed through Yan Xi Cheng's face, Duan Shun Jie didn't pay attention at all. He was desperately using his clumsy technique to serve him, he couldn't control the thing in his mouth that was seemingly alive, and because of it constantly blocked up the whole of his throat, made him miserable to the extent of nearly couldn't breathe.

The whole mouth was filled by the salty scent of seminal fluid, Duan Shun Jie did not even feel the least bit disgusted, he was diligently moving his tongue in order to give Yan Xi Cheng more pleasure. In spite of his effort, his clumsy movement seemed like it only aroused the burning fire of lust inside Yan Xi Cheng's abdomen even more.

Finally, unable to restrain himself anymore, Yan Xi Cheng's pair of hands held Duan Shun Jie on the back of his head, and started to move his body inside his warm mouth in a front and back movement.

Duan Shun Jie's mouth was completely blocked up, all of his senses was full of Yan Xi Cheng's erected male sex organ. Since earlier he already couldn't manage to be shy, the entirety of his mind was being used to endure that sex organ which unceasingly thrust in his pharynx and larynx, with all his might he intended to hold in the feeling of vomiting that was caused by that thrusting straight to his throat feeling.

Without giving Duan Shun Jie any chances to pull back from him, Yan Xi Cheng firmly held him and pressed the tip of his under belly for a while to confirm that the whole of his semen had been released inside his mouth, after then he let him go.

His eyes was conflicted when he watched Duan Shun Jie covered his choked mouth and coughed until his face swell and became very red. Yan Xi Cheng slowly pulled him to his embrace and lightly stroked his back until he could feel that he gradually became calm and stable.

"Xi Cheng, I miss you so much!" Duan Shun Jie slowly closed his eyes, indulging himself in Yan Xi Cheng's clean and clear male scent, he couldn't hold in his feelings from transforming into spoken language and let them out.

It was such a pity that all along he was closing his eyes, he didn't see that upon hearing his confession, Yan Xi Cheng was not moved and his expression was cold and indifferent.

The two people were just like that with each on their minds, intermingling and reclining on the bed. Yan Xi Cheng's hand remained with his impure intention wavered and wobbled on Duan Shun Jie's inner thigh, made his spell by spell gasp become a moan, and snuggled up even closer into his beloved person's chest.

Enjoying to his heart's content the intimacy with Yan Xi Cheng, until Chang Er knocked on his door for the third time to wake him up, only then he had no choice but to get himself up, and after exchanging several intimate kisses with Yan Xi Cheng he reluctantly left to meet the Lord of Pingnan.

"Shun Jie, your mood today is not bad!" Perhaps because he was the Lord of Chu'nan's old friend, Ouyang Fa De treated Duan Shun Jie in a manner more of approaching a nephew than a subordinate.

Knowing that his expression at this moment must be what was known as the joy puts heart into a man, Duan Shun Jie of course didn't dare to explain the reason of his elated mood. After giving his courtesy greeting, he silently sat by the side and waited for Ouyang Fa De to talk about the main subject.

As the result, Ouyang Fa De didn't pull much of the casual talk, very quick he talked about the matter: "Shun Jie, you also know, the defeat at Mount Panlong battle, how many people wanted me to grant you a heavy punishment."

Duan Shun Jie's face also became heavy and dignified, nodding his head, he knew that leaving his post without permission during the battle was such a heavy crime that absolutely couldn't be dismissed by a mere seclusion to ponder over his mistakes.

"I also had asked you so many times, what exactly the matter you needed to take care of to make you abandoned your military duty, you only gave me an unbending face that even if you had to die you also wouldn't say." Ouyang Fa De was wearing an utterly helpless face.

"Lord, I..." Duan Shun Jie's face slowly became red. He actually didn't have the face to explain that he was leaving the post without permission because he had a secret meeting with his intimate same sex friend.

"What actually was the cause, I wouldn't ask you and pursue further on the matter. Only wish that after you resume your post as Pingnan's Commander-in-Chief, you wouldn't repeat the same mistake again." Ouyang Fa De seemingly didn't have the intention to make things hard for him, directly told him his intention.

"Lord, you mean..." Duan Shun Jie was stupefied, he heard that Ouyang Fa De unexpectedly meant to entrust the Pingnan's troops Commander-in-Chief position to him. How could he shoulder this, especially after the utter defeat at Mount Panlong.

Ouyang Fa De waved his hand to indicate that he shouldn't decline again: "I don't have a son. From the beginning I have regarded you as my own son. As long as you can live up to my expectation, to lead Pingnan's troops to overthrow Datong's despotic rule, it already can be counted as you have repaid me."

If this was several days ago, the Duan Shun Jie who was towards the mortal world already lost heart lost hope, certainly wouldn't give his consent to Ouyang Fa De and made a promise about this heavy responsibility. However, today he had met and got together with Yan Xi Cheng again, Duan Shun Jie understood that he needed enough power and influences to protect their taboo relationship. Naturally towards the Lord of Pingnan's suggestion he was a little moved.

Most probably he could see that Duan Shun Jie had given his consent, Lord of Pingnan struck the iron while it's hot and said: "You also do not decline anymore. Tomorrow I will decree an order to remove your house arrest punishment, appoint you as Pingnan's whole troops' Supreme Commander. Today you can return earlier to have a rest. The next days we will have to trouble you." Patting Duan Shun Jie's shoulder, a strike of unknown feeling skimmed over the eyes of the Lord of Pingnan. But in the end he didn't say anything, only signaled that Duan Shun Jie already could take his leave.

The unexpected things which came one after another made Duan Shun Jie had a slight doubt and unable to enjoy the event, yet, at the thought of the still waiting in his manor Yan Xi Cheng, in an instant he was elated and became happy, hurriedly he rushed back to his manor.

Returning to his room, Yan Xi Cheng was still in the same condition as when he left him, stark naked lying on his bed. Telling the reason as why the Lord of Pingnan summoned him with a slight uneasy feeling, when he saw Yan Xi Cheng's joyous face, Duan Shun Jie could finally confirm that this was actually very good news, instantly joined in his happiness.

Hastily ate their meals, the two people of course rolled on the bed again. Even though he was unbearably tired and sleepy, Duan Shun Jie still couldn't resist Yan Xi Cheng and let him mess with him for several more times. Several times on the summit of desire until he couldn't hold out anymore, only then did they fell asleep together in their extreme weariness.

Yan Xi Cheng's gentleness brought about a never experienced before happiness feeling for Duan Shun Jie. If asked him what was his greatest prayer at this moment, he would definitely say without the slightest bit of hesitation that to be able to stay together with him forever --- in his heart, as long as he could be together with his most beloved one,

could be living peacefully together for all his life, it was much better than to be alone enjoying this mundane world's flourishing highest achievement.

Honestly speaking, when Yan Xi Cheng came to Jinling to find Duan Shun Jie, he didn't expect that Duan Shun Jie could preserve his original power and influence --- after all, in the Mount Panlong's battle, Duan Shun Jie had committed such an unforgivable mistake. Yan Xi Cheng at the beginning only planned to use him to get acquainted with the Pingnan's other personage, slowly looked for an opportunity to become a member of the high level officials while waiting for the chance to make his move.

Unexpectedly, this Ouyang Fa De seemed to differently value Duan Shun Jie and think highly of him. Yan Xi Cheng couldn't help but sigh in admiration for his own good fortune. Just on the second day after he arrived at Jinling, ignoring the opposition of the multitude old officials by his side, Ouyang Fa De insisted on having his way to confer upon Duan Shun Jie the title of Pingnan's Commander-in-Chief. Bestowed upon him this Pingnan's Supreme Commander, under one man but above ten thousands' sublime position.

Following the promotion, Duan Shun Jie became busier with each passing day. And yet, he diligently found the time to accompany Yan Xi Cheng, sometimes when he was too busy to come to him, he would let Yan Xi Cheng accompany him in handling his official duties.

The pretty and warm cultured Yan Xi Cheng in no time had gained the favor of many Generals in the troops. Everybody knew that by General Shun's side there was a very good friend named young master Yan.

Today, Yan Xi Cheng was like how he used to be in many times before, accompanying Duan Shun Jie in his study room to manage the military affairs. The seeping through the bamboo screen sprinkle of sunlight spilled on Yan Xi Cheng's fair and clean neck. Duan Shun Jie found it difficult to restrain the palpitation of his heart, inclining his head to steal a kiss, by an abrupt opened widely door, he gave out a great jump out of surprised.

"Who?" The rage that was floating on his brows, dissipated upon the sight of the person who was barging in ---Yan Xi Cheng of course couldn't overlook the change of Duan Shun Jie's mood, couldn't help but curiously scrutinize the coming person.

It was actually a young little girl --- be about seventeen, or eighteen. Could clearly be seen that she was coming from a very well-off family. The beautiful and charming facial feature was lively with her pair of extremely smart-looking bright eyes.

What made Yan Xi Cheng couldn't stand it was indeed the way she gazed at Duan Shun Jie. That unable to restrain smile was revealing her transparent admiration. This obvious expression of a girl in love, how could she hide the truth from Yan Xi Cheng who grown up with numerous girls since his childhood.

"Si Qi? Why do you come? Also didn't knock on the door!" A little reprimanding, Duan Shun Jie was completely using a big brother tone of speaking.

"Who is he?" Roughly because she noticed Yan Xi Cheng's scrutinizing eyes, the girl who was called as Si Qi also unwilling to be outshone, looked straight back at him.

"Ah, this one is Big Brother Yan Xi Cheng, he is my good friend."

"Xi Cheng, this is Ouyang Si Qi. She is Lord Pingnan's daughter. Don't you ever offend her! In this Jinling city, besides Lord Pingnan, her words are the law." Duan Shun Jie happily introduced them, obviously had a nice relationship with Ouyang Si Qi.

Since earlier he had known that Ouyang Fa De had a daughter. There was also a rumor in the street that he would recruit his son-in-law to become his successor --- an idea flitted across Yan Xi Cheng's mind. Yet he didn't make a sound, gazing at Ouyang Si Qi and slightly smiled to be regarded as his greeting.

Very few people could resist Yan Xi Cheng's smiling face, Ouyang Si Qi was only a young girl of course couldn't withstand his charming seduction, in an instant because of his smile, her cheeks slightly became pink.

Probably he was aware of Ouyang Si Qi's feelings of a young girl, Duan Shun Jie became a little uncomfortable. Lightly made a coughing sound, he said: "Si Qi, you came to find me, what is the matter?" If he could, he truly wanted to firmly hide Yan Xi Cheng in a place where nobody could see him, made him belong to him alone, except for himself, nobody was allowed to think about and to see his brilliant and gentle smile.

"If I don't have any problem I couldn't come to see you?" Ouyang Si Qi pouted her mouth. She shifted her attention from Yan Xi Cheng --- Hmph! Only a man with a little good looking face, how could he be compared with Big Brother Duan's gentle, mild, bright and forthright characters.

In roundabout and tactful way she had dropped a suggestion to her father about her feelings towards Duan Shun Jie, although her father at that time put on a displeased expression while saying what was a young and blind about the whole world little girl thinking about, but with that he regarded Duan Shun Jie highly to such extent, maybe the reason was because she admired and adored him --- Ouyang Si Qi of course knew her position in her father's heart.

"Little girl! This is not a place for you to play!" Didn't know why, Duan Shun Jie just didn't want to let Ouyang Si Qi and Yan Xi Cheng stay at the same place. Looking at Yan Xi Cheng as if smiling but not smiling expression while staring at Ouyang Si Qi, there was a faint uneasiness in his heart, yet, he couldn't tell what actually he was uneasy for.

"Big Brother Duan, you old and diehard man! I came to ask when you have spare time to take me to play at Qinhuai River..." Ouyang Si Qi was not the least bit conscious of Duan Shun Jie's complicated feeling, her pink apple shaped face even cuter with her young girl in love charm.²

When he was about to refuse, Yan Xi Cheng pulled Duan Shun Jie's sleeve to stop him: "Shun Jie, since I came to Jinling, I haven't gone out to play. What if you take this opportunity to take me to go sightseeing in the city."

Being gazed at with that as if could talk pair of eyes, how could Duan Shun Jie say the no word. It was the matter of course that he only could nod his head and agree. After deciding on the time to stroll around the lake with Ouyang Si Qi, they sent the overjoyed Ouyang Si Qi to her sedan chair to go back to her home.

"Xi Cheng, don't you feel that a lively girl like Si Qi is more adorable?" After sending Ouyang Si Qi home, resumed to look at the official documents with Yan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie finally unable to hold himself back from asking the doubts which residing in the deepest part of his heart.

Even if either on the bed or during their private time Yan Xi Cheng had become even more gentler towards him, yet, his face, his outer appearance was of an ordinary and mediocre man. To be faced with Ouyang Si Qi's delicate and fresh as if could nip out water face of a young lady, it was hard for him to avoid the sense of inferiority, afraid that he would be dumped by his lover.

Yan Xi Cheng gave him a sideways glance, then laughed, said: "Please!! What you have said, if heard by Ouyang Si Qi, I'm afraid that she would be sad and broken-hearted. That young lady obviously regards you as her love target, you unexpectedly worry that she would snatch your man away... Isn't this such an extremely great joke?"

Duan Shun Jie upon hearing this flushed red in an instant --- If he said that he wasn't aware of Ouyang Si Qi's feelings for him, it would be nonsense, but he had never taken this matter seriously. And now by Yan Xi Cheng's straight without concealing anything words pointed out this matter, of course he wouldn't know how to react, just let himself be ridiculed for a long time.

Very fast, the appointed day to visit a garden arrived. Duan Shun Jie, at the deciding time, had important military

affairs and was unable to get free. Facing the disappointed Ouyang Si Qi, he could only apologize again and again, but no matter what, he couldn't convince Ouyang Si Qi to nod her head in understanding.

The all along standing by his side and silently listened to their dispute Yan Xi Cheng opened his mouth and said : "If Miss Ouyang doesn't mind, just let me accompany her, so as not make things difficult for you, Shun Jie."

"This..." Duan Shun Jie was still hesitating, Ouyang Si Qi since earlier already smiled through her tears.

"It is still Big Brother Yan the nicer one, Si Qi will just go to play with Big Brother Yan. Duan Shun Jie you go die! Si Qi will never care for you anymore!!" As if wanted to show off for Duan Shun Jie to see, Ouyang Si Qi pulled Yan Xi Cheng and left. Walked for several Zhang3, she turned her head and made a grimace face for Duan Sun Jie.

As he watched the two figures unexpectedly lining together, Duan Shun Jie couldn't describe what kind of feeling was in his heart at the moment, he could only blankly send the two people to go with his eyes.

Certainly after that, Ouyang Si Qi just naturally became the Supreme Commander's Mansion frequent guest. At the beginning, she always dragged Duan Shun Jie and Yan Xi Cheng to accompany her to play, but after getting rejected so many times by Duan Shun Jie, she simply just asked Yan Xi Cheng to go with her. Every time, Yan Xi Cheng would always agree while smiling, as if he didn't notice Duan Shun Jie's face briefly darkened and dimmed.

For things to go on like this, the hearsay on the streets without a doubt would spread like wildfire. There were also many busybodies who would repeatedly come to Duan Shun Jie to hint that Yan Xi Cheng intended to make use of Ouyang Si Qi's status to climb higher into the society. Duan Shun Jie of course didn't believe. But still, it was hard to avoid to have a knot in his heart from the words the people had been saying, made him to feel an indistinct ache in his heart from time to time.

He had brought this problem up and asked Yan Xi Cheng. Yan Xi Cheng if not wearing a totally baffled face, would wear a face of being wronged. "Shun Jie, she is the daughter of the Lord of Pingnan. I am afraid that if I offended her, would bring a disadvantage to you in front of the Lord of Pingnan. If not for your sake, why would I have to endure her missy attitude? If you don't like it, then I will not go with her anymore."

If after hearing Yan Xi Cheng say it this way and he still didn't believe in him, what qualification did he have to become his lover? Duan Shun Jie blamed himself for being doubtful while unceasingly apologizing in haste. Following next, in Yan Xi Cheng's warm and loving embrace, all of his doubt and suspicion was thrown out far far away, beyond the ninth clouds.

Left aside this minor shadow in their life to be undiscussed, Duan Shun Jie always felt that his life together with Yan Xi Cheng was joyfully sweet as if honey. Countless of very trivial circumstances, when he recalled every of them he could feel the honey sweet happiness overflowing in his mind.

Whenever he was not tied up with his routine, Duan Shun Jie would be more than willing to go with Yan Xi Cheng to roam about in every single corner in Jinling. No matter when they were boating on Qinhuai River or visiting the old temples, only a mere smile or when their fingers accidentally touched, this kind of thing already could make him forget about his surrounding, people, everything, completely immersed with Yan Xi Cheng inside their own world.

"Xi Cheng, I don't believe in reincarnation. My wish for this lifetime is to be with you, stay together, never to leave each other."

Randomly on one of their strolls, the pair unexpectedly came to a quiet without any person temple on the countryside. Pulling Yan Xi Cheng to kneel down together, Duan Shun Jie gazed fixedly at the benign countenance of Bodhisattva in front of him. With the utmost honesty he faced the man beside him and stated his mind clearly.

"I... Of course I also feel the same." Although there was a little hesitation, Yan Xi Cheng also answered in a low voice.

Pulling Yan Xi Cheng to kowtow three times in front of Buddha, getting up, a thread of silliness and naivety hung on Duan Shun Jie's lips --- the just now confession and kowtow made him feel as if he and Yan Xi Cheng already confirmed each other's wishes in front of Buddha.

"Xi Cheng," Taking off a golden chain necklace that had never left his body, Duan Shun Jie put it on Yan Xi Cheng's neck, "This chain is not valuable at all, but my Master said this is the one and only keepsake from my mother. Since I was small it had never left my body, I will just give this to you."

Yan Xi Cheng fell silent for a long while, then he also took down the jade pendant on his neck and put it on Duan Shun Jie's neck. Following afterwards, with a deep and intimate kiss sealed Duan Shun Jie's unspoken solemn pledge of love.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 6

Notes:

(1): Glory, splendor, wealth and rank (id): high position and great wealth.

(2): 老頑固 – Lǎowángù : this literally means old and stubborn. Since Duan Shun Jie referred to her as 'little girl', she retorted by calling him an old and stubborn (diehard) man.

(3): Zhang : one Zhang is about 3.3 Meters.

Fallen Hero Translation chapter 7



luxiufer.livejournal.com/36674.html

Yahooo... Today is my Chinese Birthday... XD

The Fallen Hero Chapter 7



In the mortal world, there is no such thing as an everlasting happiness.

Since young already had tasted the sourness, sweetness, bitterness and the spiciness of life, Duan Shun Jie, as the matter of course, understood this principle. However, when he was in his pinnacle of happiness, when the ill-fortuned truly befell on his and Yan Xi Cheng's joyful life of sweetness, he still had his heart filled with anguish, refused to believe that everything was a cruel reality.

Although when he was small he had dreamed that his future would be with a kind of a gentle, kind and genial type of beautiful girl, after meeting with Yan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie cut off all of his dreams of marrying a girl and having a wife. Even if he knew that Yan Xi Cheng might not harbor the same intention, still, deep in his heart he still wished for this small tiny wild dream to come true.

Duan Shun Jie originally also believed that Yan Xi Cheng was the same with him, didn't think about getting married taking a wife matter, but this one mishap had completely shattered his extravagant wish to pieces.

Accidentally caught Yan Xi Cheng and Ouyang Si Qi actually tightly embraced each other in the bedroom, the little sacred area in Duan Shun Jie's heart got crumbled and shattered. The shocking sensual scene made him stiffened on the spot as if a stone statue.

Ouyang Si Qi regarded Duan Shun Jie's icy-cold and ghastly pale face as him being too frightened, timidly she admitted with a low voice that she and Yan Xi Cheng a month prior had been in a secret relationship, soon after that, wearing a teary face she begged him not to tell her father. Completely wasn't aware of Duan Shun Jie's eyes which was from the beginning to the end hadn't moved away from Yan Xi Cheng's face, staring with his unable to believe eyes.

"Xi Cheng! This... Can you tell me, what is this about?" Waiting for Yan Xi Cheng he sent Ouyang Si Qi home and returned to their room, Duan Shun Jie interrogated him how could everything happen.

"What was that? What actually had happened?" Wanted to know the answer yet afraid of being heartlessly dumped by Yan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie felt that he had never been worried about this kind of personal gains and losses before.

Yan Xi Cheng at first was wearing an expression of too embarrassed to talk about it. Under Duan Shun Jie's unceasing interrogation he finally confessed that once when he was under the influence of alcohol, he and Ouyang Si Qi had overstepped the proper border between a man and a woman, unable to stand her nags as well as afraid that if Lord of Pingnan found out it would drag Duan Shun Jie down with him, hence he continued to secretly date her.

"How come it comes to this..." After hearing Yan Xi Cheng and Ouyang Si Qi already had an intimate relationship, Duan Shun Jie could only feel that he was as if being poured by a bucketful of ice water, cold from head to toe, couldn't restrain himself from retreating a few steps then fell to sit on the edge of the bed.

"Shun Jie, I know that I have wronged you... But the sin already committed, I... I truly am incapable of reversing the

desperate situation! One wrong step to cause a thousand hatred¹! I hate it, I shouldn't wholeheartedly think for the sake of your official career, with all I might treat the Pingnan's master well, consequently come to today's predicament." Yan Xi Cheng appeared to be so remorseful and ashamed, his whole face was of conscience-stricken and blaming himself, made Duan Shun Jie's heart felt very painful.

"Then you... What do you intend to do?" To see Yan Xi Cheng in such anguish, Duan Shun Jie even more couldn't suppress the pain as well as the fright in his heart --- this Ouyang Si Qi was not an ordinary girl, the Ouyang Fa De who always regarded her as a pearl in the palm² definitely would never forgive the man who had the audacity to lay a finger on her.

"Xiao Qi... No, Si Qi said that she will certainly try to persuade her father, now it has come to this, the only way is to marry her."

"Marry!?" Like a thunder from a clear sky³ strike upon his head, Duan Shun Jie already had no ability to think, he could only repeat what Yan Xi Cheng had said --- If Yan Xi Cheng married Ouyang Si Qi, how could he manage with this matter.

The present him, his feeling for Yan Xi Cheng since earlier had become his whole life. If Yan Xi Cheng wanted to marry another person, he really was afraid that he would forfeit his rationality just like this, committed an unredeemable thing.

"Shun Jie, Shun Jie! You don't be like this! if you do not want me to marry Ouyang Si Qi, then we can elope and run out of the city, find a place, conceal our identity and live together for the rest of our life." Most probably because Duan Shun Jie's face was extremely frightening, Yan Xi Cheng dashed to him and hugged him tightly in his bosom, suggested with a whispering voice.

His suggestion indeed truly tempted Duan Shun Jie, however, he couldn't harden his heart and throw down both Ouyang Father and daughter who had treated him kindly. He really couldn't let the young Ouyang Si Qi to get through this cruel fate of being abandoned.

Upon the sight of Duan Shun Jie whose whole face miserably conflicted, Yan Xi Cheng inwardly made a cold laugh. They had been together for long time, naturally he would know that with Duan Shun Jie's tried-to-never-offended-anybody's character, he would never approve to this kind of suggestion.

As the result, Duan Shun Jie was struggling for a long time, yet in the end, he still shook his head. "No. Cannot do this... Si Qi is still a girl... We cannot do this harmful thing to her."

"Then, you want to just look on unfeelingly while I'm marrying her?" Yan Xi Cheng's tone of speaking was not anxious nor relaxed, it seemed like the one who had to battling through this hardship was Duan Shun Jie instead of him.

Duan Shun Jie's face turned pale, strongly bit down his lips, no matter what he was unable to utter the words he wanted him to marry Ouyang Si Qi from his own mouth. He understood that he was being selfish, but no matter what, he was unwilling to submissively give Yan Xi Cheng to another girl just like this.

The one who should be with Yan Xi Cheng for the whole life time is me! It is me, not Ouyang Si Qi, also absolutely not whichever man or woman!

From that day onwards, the three people entanglement as if became a strange kind of relationship.

Duan Shun Jie couldn't refuse the still unstopping asked to make love Yan Xi Cheng, also couldn't say that he didn't want him to meet Ouyang Si Qi again, to the point that when he encountered the two people being intimate, he could only pretend he didn't see anything, to turn a blind eye, like an ostrich who buried his head in the soil to escape from

reality, allowing the sorrow and loneliness of being cast aside drowned him.

However, paper can't wrap fire⁴. Fact was not something to turn a blind eye already could be regarded as nothing ever happened.

A month later, Ouyang Fa De summoned Duan Shun Jie to his manor that very night, when Duan Shun Jie saw the crying to the point had become all teary Ouyang Si Qi by his side, an ominous premonition occupied the entirety of his thoughts.

Ouyang Fa De's calm face obviously had an undertone of hard to explain by words anger. His tone also carried an never occurred before heaviness : "Shun Jie, you should know, I have always regarded you as my own nephew, haven't I?"

Duan Shun Jie nodded without any words --- Ouyang Fa De towards him indeed extremely generous, to the point compared to his own blood kins, his brothers' and his sisters' son, he regarded him even higher.

"Then why do you want to do this to Xiao Qi? Xiao Qi with that Yan young master are a harmonious couple, to the point of already pregnant, but Xiao Qi said because you don't agree, he is unwilling to marry Xiao Qi! You... You... You should know that for a girl, reputation and integrity is more important than life, you do this, do you want to harm Xiao Qi to death?" Ouyang Fa De clearly had been enraged to the utmost, even he couldn't restrain his voice from being tremble.

"Already...pregnant..." Duan Shun Jie was not the least bit noticing the Lord of Pingnan, his whole mind had been condensed by this most shocking information.

For a moment, he felt that he wanted to cry as well as wanted to laugh, didn't know what kind of expression and what kind of reaction he should make.

Indeed, Ouyang Si Qi was a girl, she and himself were different. Even if Yan Xi Cheng embraced him again and again for numerous times, it was still impossible for him to conceive a child, however, Ouyang Si Qi was different, she could conceive, could give birth to a child, she could give a birth to Yan Xi Cheng's child, she had this natural qualification to be Yan Xi Cheng's wife --- She and himself were different.

"What, You actually don't know?" Ouyang Fa De appeared to be extremely surprised too. The explicit of Yan Xi Cheng and Ouyang Si Qi's relationship had reached the phase of almost everyone without exception knew about it. As Yan Xi Cheng's best friend, Duan Shun Jie was actually such slow-witted honestly made people hard to believe.

Duan Shun Jie very slowly shook his head, he doubted himself, once he opened his mouth, everyone would be able to see his unusual state of mood, so he could only opt to lower his head and with all his might he endured the pain of heart-broken's moment.

"Since you didn't know, then I also couldn't put the blame on you anymore. You go back and persuade that surnamed Yan's brat, what virtue and ability he has to have this fortune to marry my Xiao Qi. And since now you also agree, he ought to not have whatever excuse to be offered." As it should be by rights, taking Duan Shun Jie and Yan Xi Cheng's relationship and deciphered it as good friends, Ouyang Fa De basically would never have thought that what he had said already nearly smashed and crushed the entirety of Duan Shun Jie's hope.

"Lord, please allow me to be excused early." Mustered up the remaining strength and rationality to face Ouyang Fa De and asked to be excused, Duan Shun Jie was afraid if he stayed even a second more right then right there, he would lose his self-control, to make a fool out of himself in this kind of matter.

Out of the Lord of Pingnan's manor, Duan Shun Jie didn't directly go back to his Supreme Commander's manor. Alone by himself he disorderly roamed about in Jinling like a lost and lonely ghost for almost the whole night. Until it

was almost daybreak time, only then he returned to his home.

The room still let out a brimming candle light, it was Yan Xi Cheng who was still waiting for him to return.

“Shun Jie, Where exactly had you been going to? I waited till the whole night...” Seeing that Duan Shun Jie entering the room, Yan Xi Cheng complained, but the next moment, he saw Duan Shun Jie’s white and green alarming face color, he halted his tongue immediately.

“You have known?” He was such a bright and clever type of a man, on one guess he already knew why Duan Shun Jie behaved in such unusual manner.

Being blown by the wind, Duan Shun Jie’s throat was hoarsened and muted as if unable to say any words out.

“You know she is pregnant?” Trying hard for a very long while, Duan Shun Jie finally could squeeze out a sentence.

Under the lantern light, Yan Xi Cheng, wearing moonlit colored white simple robe, jet-black long hair was loosened as it please on his shoulder --- he was still the same most beautiful also the most highly privileged lover in Duan Shun Jie’s memory.

No matter what, he dare not believe, he finally had to face the time when he had to let him go.

Yan Xi Cheng nodded his head, slowly approached Duan Shun Jie, putting his hand and pressed on his shoulder.

“Why don’t you marry her? Still said to her that you don’t marry her because I disagree.” In his heart, unexpectedly there was a faint joy. Even if the problem already muddled and completely collapsing⁵ to the point of irremediable, as long as he knew Yan Xi Cheng cared a little towards him, it was already could cause Duan Shun Jie unable to exercise control over his morale.

Yan Xi Cheng didn’t straightaway reply, but he bent his waist and gently took Duan Shun Jie into his embrace, after a long while, he finally softly said: “Because I was afraid that you will be hurt...”

Duan Shun Jie’s heart trembled in an instant, soon after that he also firmly hugged Yan Xi Cheng, pressing his face on Yan Xi Cheng’s bosom, intensely took a deep breath in his scent. The restrained for extremely long time tears flew out by the next moment.

“Xi Cheng... Xi Cheng... Why must you... No matter who Xiao Qi loves, I will wish her happiness, only you may not, but why is it...” Duan Shun Jie was truly dying to just like that abandon Ouyang Si Qi and the child in her belly to escape to faraway places with Yan Xi Cheng. Yet, his conscience really made him unable to commit such a matter, he could only choose to miserably submit to his fate.

Seeing that Duan Shun Jie was terribly hurt to such extent, deep in Yan Xi Cheng’s heart also flashed through a thread of peculiar feeling. Fighting for his affections’ women had never be lessened, but unbelievably infatuated like Duan Shun Jie, purely love him just like this, there was nearly none. Inevitably, his heart of iron and stone had slightly begun to waver because of him.

Taking his fingers and slipped them into Duan Shun Jie’s hair, gently kneaded his head, Yan Xi Cheng helped him to sit on the bed side, his warm lips wandered about on his cheek and his neck, little by little kissed away the anguish trace of tears.

Duan Shun Jie finally was no longer able to resist Yan Xi Cheng’s utmost teasing with his gentle caress, he slightly tremble from the touch. Due to his own unexpected tears, he felt ashamed to the extreme, to the point he didn’t dare to open his eyes. He could only allow Yan Xi Cheng stripping all of his clothing, using his lips and his teeth, bit by bit he called awake the sentience of the body which was icy cold from the night wind.

Holding his breath while waiting for Yan Xi Cheng's scorching hot lower body to enter his body, Duan Shun Jie clenched his teeth tightly not allowing himself to let out any sound.

The constrained mood as if adding more to Yan Xi Zheng's insanity. Duan Shun Jie stiff and rigid body practically unable to endure his close to violent assault.

Yet, even though he could feel the hot blood drip-dropping along his big thigh, he still gritted his teeth tightly and endured Yan Xi Cheng's thrusting in and pulling out movement. The entirety of his lower body was hurting as if burnt, but that kind of pain, how could reach the same extent of his heart's misery. He could only feel that his heart had almost split open, almost crushed to bits and particles by the cruel destiny. He could only bite his teeth tightly to stand firm from the tearing heart splitting lungs' kind of sorrow.

Duan Shun Jie's misery as if arousing more of Yan Xi Cheng's cruel intention, he knew that Duan Shun Jie absolutely wouldn't resist him at this moment, the more he tormented him from inside.

With ill-intention rubbing Duan Shun Jie's ripped apart lower body's wound until the fresh blood dyed the cotton-padded mattress almost entirely, until then Yan Xi Cheng with an indifferent face withdrew himself from the inner body.

Duan Shun Jie's face was ghastly pale like a corpse. With his body weary, strength exhausted, struggling for quite a long while, finally with a trembling voice he said his decision: " Xi Cheng, tomorrow I will ask the housekeeper to prepare the betrothal gift for you. You just go to Lord Pingnan's Manor and propose a marriage."

Even if just a brief and short sentence, it was as if already used up all of his vitality. After saying it, he dejectedly collapsed, his face was revealing the utmost unwillingness...

Yan Xi Cheng seemingly still had something to say, in the end, he chose not to say anything, softly heaved a sigh, he left him and climbed out the bed, alone he headed to his bedroom beside this room to retire for the night.

Very early in the next day, Yan Xi Cheng with the company of the housekeeper and the servants, together they headed to Lord Pingnan's Manor to propose a marriage.

Then Duan Shun Jie, because of his critical cold and diarrhea, didn't attend the court, just like that blankly reclined on the bed for the whole day, he could only feel that even the remnant strength to climb out of the bed he already didn't have.

Also thanks to this illness, Lord Pingnan didn't request Duan Shun Jie to participate in the wedding preparation task. Although the marriage was a sudden marriage necessitated by an unplanned pregnancy, the Supreme Commander's manor which acted as the groom family not the slightest bit neglected it, at all places the 'Xi' character⁶ was glued, red lanterns also being hung.

To walk in this kind of joyous atmosphere, Duan Shun Jie could feel a kind of unspeakable amusement as well as irony. Subconsciously, he began to avoid meeting with Yan Xi Cheng, but Yan Xi Cheng also didn't know had been busy with what, all the day he couldn't be seen.

Although living in the same house, the two people had been very rare to see each other. Duan Shun Jie heard the news regarding Yan Xi Cheng from the busybodies who passed on the information to him.

Like, he had begged his father and his relatives to come to Jinling in order to take part in his wedding ceremony with Ouyang Si Qi. Like, Yan family was said to be one of Datong's wealthiest merchant, or like, the betrothed gifts he gave to Ouyang Si Qi was ten boxes of rare treasures in total, and so on and such trivial nonsense. To the point there were people spreading the rumor that Ouyang Fa De would pass the Lord of Pingnan position to his beloved

Son-in-Law after the marriage.

Altogether with all of the sorts, Duan Shun Jie didn't know whether it was true or false, also couldn't draw enough courage to face Yan Xi Cheng to verify the matter. He was afraid to meet the nearly become someone's else husband and father Yan Xi Cheng, even more afraid to meet Yan Xi Cheng's father who knew about their relationship. He didn't know what kind of expression he should wear to face this kind of matter, even didn't know if Yan Father publicized their relationship, he would be faced with what kind of bad end.

Following the drawing closer wedding day, Yan Xi Cheng moved out from the Supreme Commander's Mansion, moved in to another mansion which was granted to him by the Lord of Pingnan, for him and his father to live in.

Already hiding from Yan Xi Cheng for several days, on the day he moved out, Duan Shun Jie still alone in the military headquarters was hiding for the whole day.

In the middle of the night, returned by himself to the already less one person room, sitting on the bedside where he had shared countless joyous nights together with Yan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie couldn't help the surging gust of hollowness and grief from his chest. His tears seemingly forced its way through his eyes socket.

He had always regarded himself as a man of steel, until he got to know Yan Xi Cheng, until then he came to realize that his inside was actually this fragile, had this much tears.

In his heart, secretly he had portrayed numerous times the scene when he and Yan Xi Cheng live together, but now, this all had become a pitiful and laughable empty talk.

Exerting his strength to grab the jade pendant inside the brocaded poach on his chest, he desperately recalled the sweet speeches and honeyed words that Yan Xi Cheng had said, yet his mind was full with the image of him and Ouyang Si Qi snuggled up to each other, almost drove him crazy.

Perhaps it had something to do with Ouyang Si Qi's pregnancy, Lord of Pingnan decided on the nearest date of the wedding ceremony. Only within ten days, it was already the happy day when the region master hosted a wedding ceremony.

The whole Jinling was immersed in the happy atmosphere of the Lord of Pingnan marrying his daughter off. On the luxurious wedding banquet, Duan Shun Jie could only put on an air of cheerfulness and drank with the numerous high officials to congratulate Pingnan Lord. Cup by cup he swallowed the bitter and astringent wedding wine to his stomach, intending to suppress the frequently threatening to float up pain and anguish.

In a big drinking party, when the wedding banquet was entering the most important part, something suddenly happened that shocked everybody.

One Pingnan soldier with whole face panic-stricken entered the audience hall: "Report, Lord. Datong's army suddenly makes a surprise attack to the city, their frontline army is currently at the ten li⁷ outside Jinling's wall."

The sudden upcoming war in an instant called awake Duan Shun Jie from his drunken state. Not knowing what to do, he lifted his head, seeing that because of this bad news had drawn his brows together with Ouyang Fa De.

"They could really choose a day!!" Ouyang Fa De obviously displeased to the utmost, "General Duan, you speed up the armies to supervise the City's gate defense. Jinling is easy to guard but hard to attack, expect that the Datong's army wouldn't be able to take it down in a short period of time. I will send someone to move the Ping'an's army, as long as the reinforcements arrived, certainly will be able to repel them."

"Yes." Ouyang Fa De's confidence of course reasonable. The city of Jinling's defense was extremely secure, as long as they gave their all to defend the city's gate, Datong's army also could find it difficult to cope with them, just had to wait for the reinforcements, both armies attacked from front and back, of course they could destroy the enemies for

sure.

Hurriedly left the audience hall with the reporting soldier, Duan Shun Jie's heart generated an unexpected relief. He didn't want to stay in that filled with joyous atmosphere grand hall even for a moment, even more, he didn't want to see with his own eyes the next ritual of Yan Xi Cheng and Ouyang Si Qi paying respect to heaven and earth, the kind of scene which would make him be broken-hearted.

Wait until he gathered in order all of his subordinates and rushed to the west gate, the situation was already considerably critical. From the top of the city wall could be seen the not far from Jinling, advancing forward, forming a dark mass of a crowd soldiers of Datong. That should be only the besiege a town vanguard unit. Looks like this time Datong came out with the whole nest⁸, vowed to fight to the death with Jinling and Pingnan's army.

"Prepare the stones and rocks, bows and arrows, firearms. Deliver the order, tell the east, south, and north gate to get ready with war." Even if his heart still was concerned about the wedding ceremony which took place in the Lord of Pingnan's Mansion, Duan Shun Jie forced himself to be steady and calm while commanding the battle.

From the beginning their preparation had been chaotic and in disorder, they could only wait for Datong's troops to attack the lower part of the wall to give them a direct blow.

"General, Bad news! The south gate unexpectedly under a surprise attack by a squadron of mounted soldiers from inside the city. The gate's guard, Fu, who is on garrison duty has been killed! The south gate is nearly down!" When everybody was focusing their attention on the gradually approaching Datong's soldiers, a soldier with whole body bathed in gold rushed into the tent to transmit the report of grievous news.

Upon hearing this, Duan Shun Jie knew that it was terribly bad, --- indeed, the not far Datong's vanguard army had halted their advancing, obviously, their original intent was to make a feign attack, one Li apart, the dense black mass of Datong's soldiers already changed their direction to pressing on towards the south.

"Come, let's go to the south. General Zhang, General Liu, you both take some soldiers to guard the west guard!"

Leaving a few of the military forces on west gate, Duan Shun Jie hurriedly rode on his horse to command the troops to charge to the south gate.

There was still quite a distance from the south gate, but the soaring flame of the set ablaze city wall already could be seen. In the middle of the flickering flame, he could see a group of people with hands holding all kinds of weaponries were ruthlessly slaughtering the Pingnan's soldiers who prevented them from opening the gate. Numerous of corpse were toppled next to the city's wall, and those people already half opened the gate's bar, it was clear as the day that their purpose was to destroy the gate to welcome the Datong's army into the city.

"How could there be so many spies infiltrating inside the city!" The one who had been following Duan Shun Jie all along, Rong Vice General, obviously in an extreme shock. The in a war preparation state city of Jinling's inspection procedures was extremely strict, unexpectedly could be infiltrated by a large amount of Datong's spies inside the city, caused him to be unable to believe no matter what.

Duan Shun Jie urged his horse to advance at its utmost speed, Cong Yun's speed immediately enabled him putting a large distance from Rong Vice General and the rest.

From south gate was still a several Li, Duan Shun Jie already took an arrow. He bent the bow and put the arrow, the arrow was launched, straight to a waving broad sword to chop off the gate's bar Datong's soldier, that person in an instant, not even had the chance to make a groaning sound as a respond, collapsed to the ground.

Duan Shun Jie was burnt with impatience, unceasingly launched the arrows, although a large number of Datong's spies were shot down by him, however the gate bar had been opened more than half.

"All of you quickly chop off the gate's bar, I will block him!" Amidst the city's wall which was set off by a blazing flame, a figure carrying a long sword on his hand appeared, in a stern voice he commanded, seemingly he was the leader of this crowd of people.

Duan Shun Jie narrowed his eyes, the sharp arrow on his hand immediately changed its direction, changed to aim on that person. To catch the brigands, must catch their King first. As long as he killed their leader, to dispose of the others of course would be much more easier.

Cong Yun's speed as if splitting the wind, in a matter of minutes already taking Duan Shun Jie closing in to the Gate for a large distance. A gust of wind gushing by, dispersing the smoke and the blaze on the city's wall, enabling Duan Shun Jie to have a very clear view on the sight of the Datong's spies' leader...

A pair of icy-cold freezing pupils, white as fine jade fair cheeks, even if dyed by fresh blood also not the least bit lessening his beautiful face, that kind of the God of Death expression was appearing on the face of the person who was the most shouldn't be appeared on this moment --- that was the one who should be with Ouyang Si Qi paying respect to the heaven and earth on the Lord Pingnan's Mansion, Yan Xi Cheng.

Duan Shun Jie's hand quivered in an instant, the arrow was launched, but from the beginning it had lost its accuracy, fell on Yan Xi Cheng's feet.

Yan Xi Cheng let out a cold laugh, leaping as if flying to the gate tower. A crude kick on the Gate which bar had been chopped off, he could actually create a crack on the heavy iron gate merely with a kick.

Duan Shun Jie, from the person to the horse, remained like a lifelike statue rooted dumbfounded on the spot. His face was entirely an expression of unable to believe, as if had completely forgotten that this place was a battlefield where alive and death was of a great concern, a moment of hesitation could ruin the whole war's favorable situation.

Vice General Rong and the majority of troops finally could keep up with him, like a surge of tidewater they crossed over Duan Shin Jie and headed forward.

Only left less than one hundred steps of a distance, but it was already too late, taking advantage of Yan Xi Cheng's impressive kick momentum, the spies of Datong --- they were actually the so called relatives of Yan Xi Cheng who were invited to the city under the pretext of attending the wedding ceremony, already joined forces to push open the gate from both side.

Once the gate opened, Yan Xi Cheng and the others swiftly leaped to the earlier had been prepared fast steeds on the side, dashed towards the outside of the city to a not so far place where the Datong's army had been unstoppably advancing.

Until the time Duan Shun Jie came to his awareness, when together with Vice General Rong and the others charged towards the City's Gate, they still had the time to witness the scene of Yan Xi Cheng and his soldiers rendezvoused with the Datong's army.

The multitude of Datong's troops with a shake the heaven quake the earth shouting voice greeted the return of Yan Xi Cheng.

"Long Live Your Highness the Seventh Prince! Long Live! Long Long Live!" The escorted and clustered around Yan Xi Cheng, in one rip, tore away the red clothes on his body. Then there was someone who helped him wear a golden colored war robe which was the symbol of Imperial Family. The impressively majestic him, using the long sword on his hand, he pointed at Jingling's city gate in front of him, the large amount of troops behind him immediately charged forward like tidewater.

If at this extent he still couldn't figure out Yan Xi Cheng's true status, then Duan Shun Jie would be the greatest idiot

among idiots. But the him who still couldn't accept the reality, even to the point he was unable to open his mouth, less to say about giving orders to command.

"Hurry!! Hurry close the city's gate!! Each and every of you, all of you, you must protect Jinling with all your might!!" Vice General Rong upon the sight of him unexpectedly dumbfounded in this kind of pressing situation practically burning with impatience, he could only take somebody else's job into his own hands and sent out verbal order in his place.

Naturally the gate which gate's bar had been broken, how could it possibly obstruct the gushing in like tidewater's crowd of Datong's army. The already waded through the city's moat Datong army without meeting much casualties had already completely opened the City's gate.

Before his eyes was a real sight of purgatory, the countless limb, body, flesh and blood flying scene caused Duan Shun Jie as if became a red-eyed killer. He unceasingly wielded his sword to cut the Datong's soldiers in front of him, yet there were still unstoppable soldiers who succeeded in charging in, even if his whole clothes already drenched in the Datong's soldiers fresh blood, he still had no way to stop the swift and fierce military assault.

"General! General! Hurry and return to Pingnan's Lord Mansion, protect the Lord is more important! I will block them here!" Vice General Rong's words suddenly made him realize that the him who was already helpless to reverse the desperate situation at this time shouldn't make a futile effort of guarding the doomed to fall city, that he should protect the Pingnan's military highest Commander to safely leave the place.

Killing the stubbornly swarming like bees soldiers of Datong to open up a bloody path, Duan Shun Jie rode on Cong Yun and sped like flashed of lightning towards Lord of Pingnan's Mansion.

"General, hurry!! The Lord has been injured severely, everybody is confused and alarmed, do not know what best to do." Upon entering the Lord of Pingnan's Mansion, the festive atmosphere a short while ago had completely vanished.

The just now in jubilation full of joy Officials, most of them had returned to their respective mansions to take their wife, children, from the old to the young, to flee from their home. The rest who left behind was like an ant on a hot pan⁹ gathered in the hall and felt quite helpless. Seeing that Duan Shun Jie rushing in, the head administrator of Pingnan's Lord's Mansion busily greeted him, guided him to the inner side of the courtyard.

"How can the Lord be injured?" The condition already worst to the point it couldn't be worsened anymore, Duan Shun Jie absolutely didn't have the time to grieve over Yan Xi Cheng deceiving conspiracy. Jinling could no longer be guarded, right now the one and only hope was to protect Ouyang Fa De to return to Ping'an City, relied on the original military force and the secure wall of the city to withstand Datong's army, then slowly recover their strength.

The head minister shook his head, sighing while saying "Truly unthinkable, the Son-in-Law unexpectedly was Datong's spy. After stabbing the Lord, he brought all of his subordinates and ran out from the Mansion..."

"Then, Si Qi..." The originally should marry and become husband shockingly became an enemy's spy, how could the always been pampered and spoiled since childhood Ouyang Si Qi endured all of this, what's more, she was conceiving a child...

Having his head hurt to the point of split open, Duan Shun Jie felt a kind of suffocated like his heart was being held firmly kind of feeling, causing him to almost have no strength to breathe, however the him at this moment no matter what he couldn't let himself collapse, he was well aware, if he couldn't hold out, Pingnan definitely would be finished thoroughly.

Entering the inner yard of Ouyang Fa De's bedroom, one glance already could see the reclining on bed with face like paper Lord of Pingnan, also the weeping by his side with tears all over her face Ouyang Si Qi.

Upon the sight of the entering Duan Shun Jie, Ouyang Si Qi as if emitting fire from her pretty eyes, charged to him and ruthlessly landed a palm on his face.

“How can you still have the face to come here! You shameless spy!”

Duan Shun Jie was being hit to stupefied, only then he could recall that he was the one taking Yan Xi Cheng to the city, he could come to know Ouyang Si Qi also because of him.

The front chest still wrapped by bandage Ouyang Fa De although still weak, he still waved his hand to stop Ouyang Si Qi: “Xiao Qi, you don’t utter nonsense! Your Big Brother also didn’t know that Yan Xi Cheng is actually the spy from Datong...”

He had never thought that until this point, the Lord of Pingnan still came to his defend, a burst of moved feeling filled Duan Shun Jie’s heart, he rushed over, gently supported the wanted to get up Ouyang Fa De.

“How is the condition outside?”

Duan Shun Jie shook his head, said: “Jinling already couldn’t be guarded, I came to protect and guard Lord and the Region Matters out of the city.”

“How long could we block them, as long as can hold out for a day, the reinforcements from Ping’an could come here.” How could Ouyang Fa De be willing to abandon the spending numerous lives and efforts of the Pingnan’s troops to secure the city of Jinling?

“There isn’t any time anymore, Yan Xi Cheng brought people to destroy the south gate, Datong’s troop already succeeded in intruding in.” Bending down his waist, Duan Shun Jie carried Ouyang Fa De on his back, after paused and hesitating for a while, he continued, “I am sorry, Lord... Unable to protect Jinling... It is my fault.”

It was because he had been fooled by Yan Xi Cheng’s romantic love to the point of muddled headed, to cause the defeat on Mount Panlong, also because he was indulging himself in the happiness of being together with Yan Xi Cheng. Inviting the wolf into the house¹⁰, to cause Jinling to fall, also to cause Lord of Pingnan to be injured badly, and to cause Ouyang Si Qi to be this broken hearted ...

If his death could redeem all of his mistakes, Duan Shun jie would opt to give up his life without the slightest hesitation; however at this moment, no matter what, the mistakes already couldn’t be redeemed. He could only choose to exhaust all of his might to protect Pingnan’s foundation so it would be unlikely to be fallen thoroughly.

Pressed by the remorseful feeling as well as shouldering a heavy responsibility, he felt that he had lost his ability to breathe. Carrying the Lord of Pingnan on his back, with large steps he rushed out of the Mansion. The already arrived at the outside of the mansion Chang Er quietly held Cong Yun and led it to him. Duan Shun Jie cautiously helped Ouyang Fa De to sit on the horse back, he himself also mounted on the horse.

After confirming that Ouyang Si Qi also had been helped to settle down properly by the bodyguards who looked after her, Duan Shun Jie gave the reign a jerk, with the several hundred people sped up towards the north gate.

Running for several Li, from the direction of Lord of Pingnan’s Mansion could be heard the transmitted sound of a large amount of horses hoofs, turning his head to look, the sky from that place had been obstructed by the billowing and surging up smoke and dust, Duan Shun Jie knew it must be done by the Datong’s army. Thinking about risking his life to guard the city Vice General Rong at this moment probably had died in the line of duty, his heart even more be filled with sadness and worried.

Still he couldn’t afford to neglect what was in his hand, unceasingly he urged his battle steed to speed up ahead.

Arriving at the North Gate, more than half of the stationed guards had been scattered to who knows where, looking

at the whole face in panic while staring at him soldiers, Duan Shun Jie understood that if he left them behind to resist the Datong's pursuing army, it would be the same as telling them to go die, he then ordered them to go together with them to go out of the city, together headed to Ping'an to retreat.

From time immemorial, victory or defeat was a common thing for the soldiers, yet to be defeated this fast and thoroughly indeed caused people to have the difficulty to endure. The group of people, except for the sound of horses hoof, there was actually not even a man that made a sound, they could only hurry on with the journey with a gloomy atmosphere towards the several hundred Li city of Ping'an.

At the time when Datong's army who searched all over the Lord of Pingnan's Mansion realized that there was no one in the mansion and rushed back to the south gate, Duan Shun Jie and the others had long been gone and deserted the place.

"Your Highness, Ouyang Fa De and the others are nowhere to be found. Definitely headed to Ping'an to flee. If we make haste to pursue them, we could make it before they arrive at the Gate of Ping'an..." Pei Jin Tian looked and looked, he couldn't see Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng having a happy face upon this victory, he decided that he should say out loud his suggestion.

"No need, " Unfortunately he still had to swallow a tactful rejection this time, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng waved his hand, "The cornered enemy need not pursue, the Pingnan traitor's military strength, more than half had been damaged on that Mount Panlong's battle and on today's defeat. In the Ping'an only left several thousands of soldiers which insufficient to be fear of. Our army had doubled their speed to come, this time they should rest and build up the strength, after several days, in one strike we will destroy Ping'an. The Pingnan traitor could be said to have already completely collapsed.

Knowing perfectly that Duan Shun Jie who had to drag a severely wounded old man and a pregnant woman absolutely wouldn't be able to run fast, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng subconsciously felt that he hadn't been bored with playing in this amusing game.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 7

Notes

- (1) One wrong step to cause thousand hatred (id): a moment of error brought forth a lifelong regret.
- (2) A pearl in the palm (id): a beloved person.
- (3) A thunder from a clear sky (id) : a bolt out of the blue.
- (4) Paper can't wrap fire (id) : There is no such thing as concealing the truth.)
- (5) Muddled and completely collapsing (id) : In a total mess, in an awful condition.
- (6) 喜 Xi means happy, this character usually glued on the door or the gate to indicate a happy occasion, especially wedding.
- (7) Li : measure word (Chinese mile), a traditional unit of length, in modern time is 500 meters.
- (8) The whole nest came out (id): to go out in full strength.
- (9) Like an ant on a hot pan (id) : restless.
- (10) Inviting the wolf into the house (id) : open the door to an enemy.

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 8



luxiufer.livejournal.com/37177.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 8



The on garrison duty guard of Ping'an, Liu Huan, upon receiving the news, personally came out to welcome the covered in dust¹ group of Lord of Pingnan.

Duan Shun Jie not at all handed over the in comatose condition Ouyang Fa De to him, instead, without consulting to anyone, he brought him to the temporary guests house of the Lord of Pingnan inside the city, and after helping Ouyang Si Qi to settle down, he himself randomly searched for a room to rest.

It was already midnight, however, the properly fully dressed and reclined Duan Shun Jie, no matter how, he was unable to fall asleep. In front of his eyes was Yan Xi Cheng...perhaps now it was more appropriate to address him as Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, wrapped in a golden armor which symbolized the Imperial Family, gazing at him with a cold smiling expression. Duan Shun Jie of course had heard each and every rumor of Datong's most reputable 'Cruel Prince', but no matter how, he couldn't relate the green-faced and long-toothed monster in his imagination with that a bit cold, a bit fawning on, also a bit gentle Yan Xi Cheng together.

The desperate kind of feeling from the pit of his stomach had no way to be wiped off. The already hastened by labor the whole day him ought to be extremely tired from the fatigue, yet he was not sleepy at all.

The gloomy and depressed feeling at long last could be diminished a little. Duan Shun Jie tossed the dirtied clothes to the side, the flimsy middle layer of his clothes made him shiver from the cold in the night with a slight chill in the air.

His mind was in an uproar disorder, he knew that the thing he should ponder over deeply at this time was how to protect Ping'an City, their last stronghold, still, no matter what he did, he still couldn't lead his mind to ponder over the said matter.

His whole mind was filled with when he and Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng got to know each other, the scene after scene from the time they lived together, every word that they had said, every little thing that they had done, all of those distinct motions which could cause him to be extremely heart-broken.

Recalling that first night when he was timidly shaking and trembling while panting and gasping under Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's affectionate fondle, also the numerous nights they had spent together, all the shameful to death sweet speeches and honeyed words² he had said with the extremely intimate manner ...It had never crossed his mind, this kind of him who offered all his heart wholeheartedly, actually faced with a liar who coldly laughed at him inwardly.

Truly wanted to dig a hole and hide inside it, Duan Shun Jie could only feel, the present him couldn't find a place to hide from shame to the point he didn't wish to see whoever in this world, he desperately firmly suppressed his impulse to cry out loud, in result he was suffocated and nearly lost his ability to breathe. He felt that only by recklessly bumping himself against a wall would he be able to disperse completely the depressing steam inside his chest.

Just like that, he struggled alone on the bed until the sky turned bright, still he couldn't fall asleep. The next day, the still laying on the bed him could hear the sound of the bustling about people from outside his room, but none of them came to ask about him, he wanted to go out but was politely blocked by the guards who stood on guard at his door. Duan Shun Jie understood by heart that this had to be the order of Ouyang Si Qi, in her heart she must think that he was the same with the already returned to Datong's side, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, spy of Datong. Probably waited until

Ouyang Fa De regained his consciousness, she would ask him to give an order to execute him.

The Duan Shun Jie who already could feel the faraway death at this moment looked like he wasn't afraid at all, with the mood he was in presently, perhaps only by giving up all of this mortal world was his only way to free himself.

The past several months, the not at all existed in reality Yan Xi Cheng as if had become all of his reason to be happy. Now, that reason had been confirmed as a merely malevolent falsehood.

The lie was already impossible to turn into reality, and now that he had taken the Pingnan's Lord Father and daughter to Ping'an safely, could be considered as him without any worry unloaded the last heavy burden from his heart.

Maybe this was truly the end...Duan Shun Jie couldn't help but tightly clench on the jade pendant on his chest, no matter Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's motive stemmed from whatever to give this to him at that time, after all, this was the solid proof that this kind of feeling had existed before. It was a kind of no matter how he wouldn't want to give up sort of feeling --- even if in actuality it was nothing more than a cruel and filled with malice falsehood, however, it was still the most beautiful memory in his dull life.

Badly wished to once again see the pair of gentle and be filled with teasing smiling eyes which belonged to Yan Xi Cheng, but in front of his eyes only flashed the completely unfeeling and arrogant expression of the Seventh Prince.

Didn't dare to think about it any further, Duan Shun Jie busily exerted his strength to cover his eyes, but he could feel that his palm little by little became wet...

In the evening, the already didn't count on the wish for Ouyang Si Qi to forgive him Duan Shun Jie unexpectedly received an order that Ouyang Fa De asked to meet him.

"Lord." Sorting out all of his feelings of desperation, Duan Shun Jie diligently made himself to appear as calm and tranquil.

The reclining on the narrow and low bed Ouyang Fa De unexpectedly looked weak, paled face completely devoid of blood color, caused Duan Shun Jie to be secretly in alarm.

Ouyang Fa De lifted his head to glance at the kneeling on the floor him, then waved his hand to signal the standing on the side Ouyang Si Qi together with the all officials to stand a bit closer.

"Shun Jie, you on the Mount Panlong's war committed a grave mistake, lost several tens of thousands of the military force, also invited a wolf into the house, taking in the Datong's spy to Jinling, consequently comes to today unrepairable situation, do you admit your fault?" Ouyang Fa De's voice although weak, upon hearing it, in Duan Shun Jie's heart, it was as if a sharp knife was gauging out on his chest again and again.

"It is indeed because I³ had neglected my duty, wish the Lord to punish me accordingly." What ought to come would always come, Duan Shun Jie solemnly replied, his heart was exceptionally calm.

More than twenty years passed through spring and autumn, there was nothing worth making him reluctant to part with this world, until today, the one and only regret was because he hadn't had the chance to confirm whether Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng actually had ever felt something for him or not.

Saying it was the regret, Duan Shun Jie clearly understood by heart what the answer would be --- The Cruel Prince was not only scheming but was also hard to understand, his outstanding reputation had been widely known in this world since long ago, the women who was heartbroken because of him didn't know how many in total, yet never heard his heart had ever truly been moved by someone --- this kind of man how could he possibly feel anything for him.

"You continuously committed grave sin, causing the Pingnan's troops to be defeated to the point of mud... Do you know why I didn't punish you immediately, yet still entrusted you with another important task?" The direction of the conversation was didn't actually progress as what he had imagined.

Duan Shun Jie found himself a little unable to handle it, his heart was terrified, could only kneel his self even lower : "I honestly didn't know, I'm afraid that My Lord had misplaced your kindness."

"Stupid child..." Ouyang Fa De suddenly coughed violently, blackish red of fresh blood unceasingly spilled from the corner of his mouth, Ouyang Si Qi with tears flowing wiped it for him, Duan Shun Jie was also secretly in alarm, but because of his restricted circumstances he didn't dare to voice out his concern.

"Duan Shun Jie, you listen carefully and clearly, Si Qi also listen properly together..." Ouyang Fa De's face had the sentimental feeling upon recalling his former days, his tone also had become very slow with grief and distress, "A part of past event, I am a bit embarrassed to talk about it..."

"It was twenty five years ago, at that time I was only twenty, also didn't understand what was called as predestined relationship, with a prostitute called Yun Niang, I was in relationship. My family background was of government official, my father of course wouldn't allow me to marry a prostitute. I also couldn't resist the coercion of the family, in the very end I betrayed Yun Niang and married with Xiao Qi's mother as my wife. After I married, there was no more news about Yun Niang, I knew that she married another man. But who could have known, three years later, one of Yun Niang's friends held the still wrapped in infancy swaddling clothes you came to see me, she said Yun Niang had passed away because of grave illness, and you were the son of me and Yun Niang that she had after I left her. Me at that time was a conceited youth, could only think that it was impossible for a prostitute to have a genuine love, maybe Yun Niang afraid that after she passed away her son would be left alone without anyone to depend on so she asked them to say that you were my flesh and blood, therefore, after I took you, I gave you to your teacher's place, to be raised by him. However, few years ago, one of my old acquaintance mentioned about this past event, said that Yun Niang was truly a faithful woman. That year, after I left her, she was inconsolably broken-hearted to the point she didn't receive even one guest anymore, merely by doing embroidery work and repairing clothing she made a living, until several years later due to poverty compounded by ill health she passed away. Upon this I realized the me at that time was truly a cruel and heartless youth. Then I begged to your teacher to give you back to stay by my side, intended to use this to compensate my wrong doing towards Yun Niang..."

Each and every man who was present at that place was shocked upon hearing this utterly incredible story. Wanted to say didn't believe, but Ouyang Fa De was having an unable to describe expression of sorrow. Knowing that he had always been a cautious and strict kind of character, Duan Shun Jie and the others else naturally wouldn't dare to suspect that he was telling a joke.

And yet, if this matter was true, it still was unavoidably excessively outrageous, no matter how Duan Shun Jie thought of it, he could only feel the absurdness of the matter. He had always thought himself as a lonely orphan without anyone to rely on, how could he believe that he actually had been living near to his real father and sister for this long while. However, Ouyang Fa De's unsuited common sense in favor and indulgence in him was only to have this kind of explanation so that he could be considered as reasonable.

Most probably he could see the shocked expression of everyone, Ouyang Fa De laughed at himself: "So unlikely the thing I could do, isn't it? I am merely a despicable self-centered man, countless times I thought about telling you, but I was afraid that you would hate me and leave me, I could only hide it until today."

"Lord, please don't talk anymore..." Duan Shun Jie's heart was already having more than necessary turmoil, Ouyang Fa De's unfortunate story of life experience only would add more to his inconvenience, consequently he was completely at a loss of how should he manage the problem.

"Originally I planned to tell you this matter after I seized the world, but now..." Ouyang Fa De lightly closed his eyes,

"Now could only entrust this on the verge of hopeless situation Pingnan to you, hope you don't follow the track of an overturned cart⁴, properly protect this very last stronghold."

"This, absolutely can't accept it..." Hearing that Ouyang Fa De was actually planning to pass him the Pingnan's throne, Duan Shun Jie was terrified to the utmost point at once. Until now towards the fact that he was actually the Lord of Pingnan's real son, by any means he still couldn't even have the least bit sense of reality, so how in the world could he accept this kind of heavy responsibility.

"My son, you just don't decline it anymore. The title of Lord of Pingnan now is no longer a glorious title but a heavy burden, you...you must..." Perhaps because he had said out the last secret in his heart, the vitality of Pingnan's Lord gradually failed, the muscle on his face began to twitch, his body also became feeble and toppled down.

"...Father!!" Ouyang Si Qi cried out with her high pitched voice, next, she desperately hugged Ouyang Fa De. The stood by the side doctors also one by one stepped forward to give medical treatment.

"...Lord!" Duan Shun Jie was hesitating over and over again, yet no matter what he still couldn't call out this 'father' one word. Looking at Ouyang Fa de's eyes flashing with despair slowly closing, even if he was burning with impatience he still couldn't think of a way to make him revoke the command.

Two hours later, the treated to the utmost extent in innumerable bustling way Lord of Pingnan, Ouyang Fa De, finally gave up on this mortal life in the on the verge of collapsing stronghold which he single-handedly established. And the drowning in the pain of losing her father, doubled the agony of being deceived and abandoned by the hadn't married yet husband Ouyang Si Qi, seemingly didn't have any remaining strength to oppose against her father's last wish, in the end, the Ministers whom were assigned by Ouyang Fa De provided assistance for Duan Shun Jie to carry on the Pingnan's throne.

Although felt like it was a dream to become the new Lord of Pingnan, Duan Shun Jie couldn't even find the slightest bit of joy in his heart.

Outside the city was the unceasingly approaching Datong's troops, inside the city was a host of dragons without a head⁵ Pingnan's army and in a state of anxiety to the point of unable to carry on even for a single day civilians, adding more to the suppressed heavy and complex feeling he had for Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, he felt that the whole of his vitality was overwhelmed by all of this matter.

Mustered up all of his vigor to deal with the gushing like tidewater miscellaneous routine work, also still needed to be constantly on guard against Datong's spies and surprise attack, Duan Shun Jie could only feel that he had been both mentally and physically exhausted.

A month later, the completely purged Jinling's defense Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng finally began to lead the Datong's army to approach Ping'an. Facing the panic-stricken expression of the officials inside the hall, Duan Shun Jie faintly had a little expectation for the ending to come, the expectation for that cruel extermination which would allow the agony in his heart to be finally alleviated a little.

On the day when Datong's army arrived at the outside of Ping'an city, the weather had completely entered the ambience of cool and chilly mid-autumn.

Duan Shun Jie who since earlier had cleared out of everything, surprisingly became very calm. Since early in the morning had busily begun to give instruction about defense from inside the city. He didn't even feel a thread of coldness, on the contrary, he felt that the surrounding atmosphere was carrying a trace of mysterious gloominess, as if adding more to the burning kind of mood to be known as uneasiness.

Before his eyes, the color of the sky slowly turned to pitch black, with heart tormented by indistinct expectation, Duan Shun Jie was unable to go on with the reading of the document in his hand. Walking to the front of the window,

he pushed open the window and gazed down at the bustling soldiers not far from the office. Great war was within sight, the expression on every face was of the nervousness as well as a bit of excited, Duan Shun Jie couldn't help but be reminded about himself from several years ago.

Gritting his teeth, he was afraid that he would recall about the man who had made him nearly abandon his awareness as a warrior, but his heart, the moment that name flash across his mind, still throbbed for a spell.

It was not pain... It was not that kind of first time facing the betrayal severe to the point of ripping apart kind of anguish, but it was that kind of heartfelt resentment together with his powerlessness.

After taking away all of his depression, Duan Shun Jie just like that as if a stone statue stood in front of the window. Until he heard the light sound of 'ka' from the door behind him, then he turned his head to look.

Upon seeing the person who came, his first reaction was he was having a hallucination. At the time when his senses became clear, his mouth had been firmly covered by Xuan Yuan who stealthily sneaked in.

Planning to break free from the hand that was suppressing him, the moment when Duan Shun Jie touched that arm with vivid warmth, he felt a burst of unable to be reasoned with dizziness --- it was like the already hadn't met for several hundred years of the extremely beautiful appearance simply made a stop in front of his eyes. As a result, he could only powerlessly allow that pair of powerful arms to hold him in his embrace.

Probably could sense that Duan Shun Jie's state of mood from shocked had recovered to its calmness, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng loosened his hand, slightly smiling while retreating a few steps then sat himself on the chair behind him.

"What great nerve you have!" At the present was still dusk, the sky was still bright. The greatest enemy of Pingnan's troop actually dared to boldly march in the enemy's base, if not insane, then he must not take the enemy seriously at all.

A flash of alertness swept past Duan Shun Jie's pair of eyes, he shifted his step, his hand already placed on the hilt of his sword.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was still as before, smiling with composed and leisure face: "Why should get angry! Shun Jie, I come here merely to ask you for a drink... Not believe? You check me, there isn't any weapon on my body."

He moved his body closer as if provoking, he lifted Duan Shun Jie's hand to caress his chest, at the sight of him hastily pulled away his hand with a pitiful expression, he laughed to add more of his gorgeous feature.

"Won't you be afraid if I die in this battle, from now on you won't be able to see me again?" Without concealing his words he talked about death, Duan Shun Jie understood that this speech was because he had the confident that he wouldn't be killed.

"Disaster for a thousand years, if you were this easy to die, truthfully it will be our Pingnan's fortune." Knowing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng liked to tease his misbehavior, Duan Shun Jie with his greatest extent ordered himself to calm down.

"Let's go. I know a place with a small store, the food and drink is not bad."

"How do you know I will go with you?" Duan Shun Jie felt it was ridiculous, on the eve of a great war for both armies, the enemy's leader unexpectedly would invite the Commander in Chief of the other side to have a drink. This kind of against all of orthodoxy circumstances most probably only Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng alone could think of.

"Because I know."

Duan Shun Jie really wanted to give him a slap to wipe out the confident on his face. Unable to ignore the still burning fiercely flame in his heart made Duan Shun Jie couldn't shake his head to voice out his refusal.

Muttering to himself irresolutely for a short while, his hand in the end lifted from the sword hilt. Taking the randomly tossed to the side outer robe, with a deep voice he faced Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, said : "Let's go!"

In an instant, Xuan Yuan's face burst into a blossom of unrivalled smile. He inclined his body and somehow there was a pace of wind that pushed open the door behind him, he made a 'please' gesture.

Duan Shun Jie didn't mutter anymore, with a large stride he walked out. Ignoring the collapsing guards who was hit unconscious by Xuan Yuan, the two people with quick steps had crossed the long and winding corridor.

Adjusting his way of thinking to overcome his cowardliness, Duan Shun Jie knew that his action on just go and following Xuan Yuan was stupid to the extreme and couldn't be reasoned with, but he still had the stake it all delight. He wasn't afraid of whatever scheme that Xuan Yuan still kept, even as far as subconsciously had a small wish that he could just like that go with Xuan Yuan without having to return, annihilated like a moth that flew into fire to seek his own doom in Xuan Yuan's scheme. In this way he wouldn't have to face the cruel end for both to meet on the battlefield.

The Xuan Yuan in front of him was getting faster, the route of path also had changed from the proper road to the rooftop like flew past the mountain path. Duan Shun Jie also didn't think of anything else but pursuing him, in his mind there was a kind of even if going to the end of the world also would go sort of deep feeling.

Like the initial plan, their destination was not far at all, it was in a small town in the outskirts of Ping'an.

At the time when the sunset in the west in a small town, the whole body donned in black Xuan Yuan majestically sat down in a small wine shop. Without minding the surrounding people who casted curious eyes, he shouted loudly: "Waiter, give me a jar of Baigan, and some good dishes."

There was a bit of not knowing whether to laugh or cry as well as a bit of indescribable frustration, Duan Shun Jie wordlessly sat himself on the long bench in front of him. Didn't want to look at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's face which could make his heart move and pained, he chose to lower his head and stared at the coarse and oily surface of the table.

Xuan Yuan also didn't mind him, seemingly he was truly coming to merely have a drink like manner, when the waiter served the wine, he poured to full cup for himself and for Duan Shun Jie.

"Have a drink!" Without waiting for the respond from the opposite, he took his cup and drank it dry to the bottom.

Duan Shun Jie still remained staring at the cup in front of him without uttering a word, he just let Xuan Yuan to drink by himself until a full three cups.

"Duan Shun Jie!" Xuan Yuan's voice was without any hint of drunk, on the contrary, compared to whichever time was even much more clearer, "If I have wronged you, today, with this three cups of wine, consider it as my apology to you. The thing in the past, please don't put it in your heart. If you and I can't avoid to see each other with our naked sword, I don't wish for you to regard whatever former friendship, just mind that we are facing with real swords real spears!"

The blunt without hidden meaning speech, in Duan Shun Jie's ears, he could immediately conclude that Xuan Yuan wanted to cut off their former days ill-fated relationship.

Without any omen, somewhere in his heart was ripped and twisted by anguish.

His whole person was as if being poisoned, rigidly stayed on that simple and crude long bench. He knew that he should be unaffectedly lifted up the wine jar in front of him and heroically drank up three cups of wine then very loud and clear laugh while saying it is fine, I don't put it in heart, I know that everything was solely a scheme to confront an enemy hahaha, but his arm seemed like it had been filled with a lead kind of heaviness. He couldn't lift his hand

even a little, also couldn't say a word. He was afraid that once he opened his mouth he would let himself be intolerably embarrassed.

When he came, the original feeling of going to the end of the world together, wished to just follow Xuan Yuan even if to be led to a dead end, that kind of free-minded feeling in this mourn in silence atmosphere had dispersed and changed into an unbearable irony...

Duan Shun Jie didn't say a word all along, also didn't look at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's face, like a piece of stone he was nailed on his spot, even when he felt Xuan Yuan stood up and got ready to leave he remained silent, not even a word he could utter.

Hearing Xuan Yuan drew out the silver and tossed it on the table with a light 'ting' sound, Duan Shun Jie whole body jerked for a moment, hesitating for a long while finally he lifted his head --- Xuan Yuan already turned his body, showing his back, ready to leave. In his line of vision only the black colored robe's sleeve fluttered as if greeted the wind...

Again, he had the kind of nauseated feeling that made him wanted to vomit.

Duan Shun Jie seemed like he returned to himself on that summer day, the him who ran like mad in the courtyard to search for the disappearing Yan Xi Cheng forgetting that his subordinates were bathing in blood fighting bravely in the bloody battlefield, the him who cried blood tears over the vanish into the mist lover instead of the shame of being defeated in a war.

Truly want to vomit like crazy.

Just like that, throwing up all the blood inside his body as well as the infiltrating feeling altogether. Even if he had to die, he didn't want the despair and the shame of his infatuation to linger inside him even for a moment or a second.

"Xuan Yuan..." Thinking that he was murmuring in his heart, upon seeing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng turned his head and revealed a weird expression, only then he realized that he had called him out loud.

Xuan Yuan's expression was also very complicated. A hard to explain by words assorted feeling seemingly floated in his eyes at that moment. After hesitating for a while, he turned his body back, with a large step he strode towards Duan Shun Jie, stretching out his hands, he firmly held his stiff shoulder into his embrace.

Ignoring the surrounding people's expression who were looking at them curiously while gasping a mouthful of cold air in unison, Xuan Yuan bent his waist and whispered in Duan Shun Jie's ear: "Let's leave, we will drink at another place."

Without waiting for his reply, he turned to take the hadn't finished wine on the table, another hand pulled Duan Shun Jie, then left that small wine shop.

Towards this sudden change of circumstances, Duan Shun Jie didn't even know how to properly respond. Yet, he was unwilling to throw off Xuan Yuan's pair of warm hands just like that, he could only allow him to half drag half pull him to cross half of the little town, stood in front of an inn.

"Waiter, give me an upstairs room, prepare wine and a meal." Moving in a manner like a drunkard who hadn't had enough drink, Xuan Yuan didn't the least bit attract people's suspicion for giving him and Duan Shun Jie a room where they wouldn't be disturbed.

An ambiguous as well as chaotic presentiment gave raise from Duan Shun Jie's heart. Dissolving the solid ice inside him which was freezing because of Xuan Yuan's heartlessness, making the hadn't infected by wine face slightly blushed in red.

"Now you look more like a living person, before I thought that if I spoke more sentences you would collapse... Like this is actually good, I don't have to prepare for a long war to besiege the town." Walking to close the door and put on the door plug, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng laughingly talked while leaning on the door.

You want me to live, I live. You want me to die, I die.

Duan Shun Jie's face had turned ghastly pale again, he knew that his feeling had been exposed completely since earlier yet he still couldn't say even half a word to defend himself.

"Forget it, let's drink the wine." Xuan Yuan truly knew how to handle people, stopping before going too far, he didn't overdo the mocking. He walked back to the table and poured the wine for him and Duan Shun Jie, signaling them to drink and eat together.

It had come to this phase, Duan Shun Jie also cast everything to the back of his mind. He also didn't think to talk more, only silently cup by cup with Xuan Yuan gulped down the liquor.

Drinking wine with pent up feelings, very quick Duan Shun Jie had become drunk.

In a daze, he felt Xuan Yuan had slowly moved to his side, he squeezed a small cup of wine into his hand, hearing him whisper in soft voice in his ear, saying he wanted Duan Shun Jie to drink the nuptial cup⁶, then vaguely hooked their arms together, with this kind of awkward gesture drank all the wine in the cup.

"After drinking the wedding wine, next to come is the bridal chamber. Duan Shun Jie, let me love you dearly, I know you have been waiting for me for long time..." Xuan Yuan's manner of speech was full of ridiculing and indecent meaning, yet, Duan Shun Jie didn't even feel discouraged nor disgusted.

The indistinct expectation finally became reality, because of being drunk, Duan Shun Jie didn't dare to believe that this was real.

Because of that uncontrollable, hard to believe kind of insane joy, Duan Shun Jie actually didn't make an effort to resist when Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng lifted both of his hands and tied them on the bedpost. He just foolishly stared at his unknotting the sash movement, stared at his graceful neck, the covered with firm muscle abdomen, and the hanging between the thighs sex organ slowly exposed before his eyes.

The at several Li large scale of enemy troops preparing to invade the city that he was about to confront against was not in Duan Shun Jie mind anymore, his whole thoughts only had this man in front of his eyes. As long as he was with him, that was what he considered as his whole universe.

Seeing Duan Shun Jie so yielding and meek, a flash of unstoppable cold laugh flitted pass Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's pair of eyes. Seizing Duan Shun Jie's ankle, he set both of his legs on the both sides of the bed, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng then slowly mounted on his body...

The since earlier had been trained thoroughly body almost shouting out expecting him to enter, however, seemingly striving to torment Duan Shun Jie, the Seventh Prince spent a longer than usual time to carry out the foreplay.

The nimble tongue continuously lingered on the neck and the chest, the two grain of nipples was being nibbled and gnawed to the point of painful as if burning extent, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng still leaned over on his body using his fingers and teeth to tease the two swelling almost became transparent little spot.

Both of his hands and legs were being tied up, Duan Shun Jie's posture at this moment was very pitiful and completely lacked the strength to resist. Afraid that he would be heard by the other guests in the inn, he bit down his lips with all his might to hold in the groaning sound, yet it only increased the pleasure of this taboo sexual intercourse.

Duan Shun Jie's abdomen already a mess with a layer of whitish seminal fluid from his own ejaculation, he could see Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's erection had been swollen and hard to a terrifying extent, the Seventh Prince still stubbornly being tardy and refused to enter the inner side of his body.

Almost couldn't endure the hunger and thirst he wanted to shout out the totally immoral word for him to quickly enter. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng still coldly glanced at him then pulled a scarf to cover Duan Shun Jie's pair of eyes.

His whole body couldn't make a move, even his eyes also couldn't see, Duan Shun Jie fell into a state of panic, he could only sense Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's fingers began to smear his inner body with scented oil as the lubrication, about to be filled expectation was broken by the following stuffed in material...

The entering the most sacred part of his body which caused a spell by spell crisp and itching feeling was actually a kind of unknown pill, also, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's fingers continuously pushed the pill to enter innermost part of his body.

"Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, what are you doing!!" Fear had completely taken possession of Duan Shun Jie's heart, once again he was betrayed, the trampled on feeling was as if he was ruthlessly slapped on the face, made his whole person began to shiver violently.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng one hand held Duan Shun Jie's chin, the other hand was still poking his inside, his manner of speaking was full of ridiculing which made Duan Shun Jie tremble in fear: "Being stupid also must have a limit. Since you really want a man to thrust in you, I will help you to accomplish it. You are such a man who if not being thrust by a man would be suffering to death. Remember my favor! This is because I have a pity, this hard to come by pill a tribute from West Border..."

He could feel that the pill had been delivered to the deepest of his intestines, slowly melt in the depth of his body, in an instant, that delicate part was rustling with a strange itch. Duan Shun Jie couldn't bear it and uncontrollably writhed his body. The intention to let loose a torrent of abusive words was completely being knocked down by the overwhelming grief from the bottom of his heart, to the extent that even a syllable he also couldn't say it out.

"Tsk tsks, look at the way you sway! So cheap, only wished to be thrust. Only me can help you to accomplish it!"

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng took the waiting for action for a long time knife like flesh under his hip to forcefully thrust in Duan Shun Jie's body. Although the strange itch inside of his body was alleviated a little by this action, Duan Shun Jie's heart already hurt to the point of totally numb, to the extent he even wished to give up breathing... He finally couldn't restrain the dripping tears that he had been holding in for long time. Even if his conscious was in disordered confusion, he still could clearly understand that he was step by step slipping towards a blind alley where no one could save him...

In this world, how could there be such a stupid person like him. Being framed up to such degree still chose to believe that again and again hurt him person. To get into today's phase, the whole thing only had his ownself to be blamed!

"I will give you the most suited tattoo!" After several times thrust in and out, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng carelessly ejaculated all of his desire inside Duan Shun Jie's body. Following after was a rustling sound, looks like he was searching for something.

The sound stopped, afterwards Duan Shun Jie felt the inner side of his thigh was burning with a bit by bit scorching pain. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng seemed like using a dagger to carve a letter around his delicate skin, each stroke was accompanied by the drip drop of fresh blood. Duan Shun Jie was as if he had lost his spirit, unable to move even to stir. Until the darkness that he had been waiting for long time completely engulfed him...

When he came to his consciousness, it was already midday. On the chaotic bed of the inn, only left Duan Shun Jie alone. The naked lower body exhibited a trace of mixed bodily liquid made him had a spell of dizziness. But until he

looked at the inner side of his thigh with a shocking the eyes astonished the heart⁷ big character of '賤' which was engraved with a sharp dagger, only by then he quivered and thoroughly awakened.

Unable to manage his current toppled the mountains and overturned the seas⁸ like despair and helplessness, he covered himself with the crumpled to a regiment clothes and with no clear objective he walked to the window. When he pushed open the window he finally realized what kind of noise that had woken him up ---the whole street was filled with the citizens who were carrying back their children and they familial belongings, the people fled in disorder to all over the place.

"Pingnan's troops already retreated. I heard that the Datong's army are ready to flood Ping'an with blood. We here also couldn't be saved anymore, Sister-in-Law⁹, you take your children and run to the west." A youth who was carrying his mother on his back most probably met with his acquaintance, was being grabbed to be asked about the situation. His answer as if a pointed drill to serve as the ultimate hit for Duan Shun Jie.

Under the gloomy color of the sky, he was like soulless puppet dejectedly collapsed on the floor. Struggling to stand up, but it was as if he had lost all of his strength...

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 8

Notes:

1. Covered in dust (id): have endured the hardships of a long journey.
2. Sweet speeches and honeyed words (id) : hypocritical flattery.
3. Duan Shun Jie used Subordinate to address himself in this part. But if I translate it as it is , like : It is indeed because your subordinate had neglected his duty. This way, it would feel as if he was throwing his responsibility to his subordinates, lol, therefore, I changed it to 'I'.
4. To follow the track of an overtunedcart : follow the same old road to ruin, To repeat a disastrous policy.
5. A host of dragons without a head ; A group without a leader.

6. Drink the nuptial cup : part of an old fashioned marriage ceremony, in which the bride and the bridegroom drink out of goblets tied together by red thread, exchanging cups and drink again.

7. Shocking the eyes astonished the heart (id) : horrible to see.

賤 (jian) : cheap, low, worthless , so, I left it with the original character so you can imagine how many strokes Xi Cheng used. LOL.. XD)

8. Toppled the mountains and overturned the seas (id) : earth-shattering, gigantic, incredible.

9. Sister-in-Law here doesn't necessarily mean relatives. Chinese often address a married woman as Sister-in-Law.

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 9



luxiufer.livejournal.com/37744.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 9



After Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng led Datong's army to attack Ping'an, it was not like the rumored bloody execution at all. After tracking down and arresting Pingnan's high officials and their family members, they carried out the aid and comfort measure step, beginning with providing the civilians with what they needed whether it was money or food. Towards those people who had served as Pingnan's lowest officials was also to forget and not bring recriminations¹. Very quickly the situation in Ping'an had stabilized.

Ping'an City was basically the Southern Region's most flourishing trading town, once the situation stabilized, the market conditions also resumed to their former days of bustling business in no time.

"Lao Wang², give me two bowls of soy milk, one steamer full of buns." Lao Wang represented the commoner of this Ping'an City. He opened a homemade snack shop inside the City. Although it was only a business with little capital, the business was not so bad.

"Waiter, go make the soy milk, then take a steamer full of buns." Lao Wang told the new waiter he hired just a month ago. Regarding this waiter, he felt at ease in his heart. This waiter had a neat and tidy appearance, body build was also healthy and strong, he only wanted to manage the food and lodging without wanting any salary. To find this kind of waiter was truly like the Heaven had dropped upon him a huge portion of pastry.

The young man who was called as waiter orderly served the customer their soy milk and buns, then quietly cleared away the dirty bowls and chopsticks on the other table. His upright face was without whatever expression.

Nobody would have known, this completely without any special trait waiter could be the once shook the world, the mighty General of Pingnan, Duan Shun Jie.

When he returned to Ping'an from the inn, Pingnan's defeat already couldn't be redeemed. The retreating remnants of the defeated troops had fled southward to the forest in the mountain, however, it was already very difficult to stage a comeback to recover the former glory days. Feeling that he already had no face to see his old friends, Duan Shun Jie also didn't choose to join with his former subordinates, but just stayed in Ping'an City.

Of course, there was one more reason that caused him to do so, that was to wait for an opportunity to rescue Ouyang Si Qi and several of Lord Pingnan's Commanders and Officials who were captured and taken as prisoners by Datong's army.

Even if it was said that Ouyang Si Qi was conceiving Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's child, however, Duan Shun Jie doubted the Cruel Prince would treat her well for this reason. There was too much hearsay regarding this mysterious Prince within Ping'an City. Among those, his unrestrained behavior was what people took the most delight in talking about. They said that his current wife was praised as Tong'an's utmost beauty, the daughter of the Left Prime Minister, already gave him two sons. Amidst the rumors it was also said the women he was involved with, their number couldn't be counted, yet never had heard anyone who could gain and monopolize his favor.

Inside his heart, he was very clear that the current Ouyang Si Qi definitely hated him to the bone, but in the end, she was Duan Shun Jie's one and only remaining blood relative in this world. His feeling towards his cherished sister who was unfortunate and miserable was complicated.

Although he had been jealous of her and Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's relationship, but when the cruel reality unfolding before him, at that time he had just suddenly realized that both brother and sister were merely miserable people who were played with by this cruel fate.

Wishing to rescue Ouyang Si Qi, wishing to grant his sister a brand new happy life was the only goal supporting Duan Shun Jie to live on. The wound in his still dripping blood heart hadn't formed a scab yet from being cut open. The feelings he once had for Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng had become an infected rotten wound to the point that he himself had no courage to face it, with no power to cure it, could only look at it spread day by day, ulcerated, until it eroded the whole of his life.

While Datong's army still immersed in the joyousness of victory from successfully wiping out Pingnan's troops, the guard on the captured prisoners of war was not tight at all. However, Duan Shun Jie from beginning to end restrained himself and didn't take any action. He was afraid of the possibility of running into Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. He didn't know what kind of expression he should wear, what kind of feelings should he use to face the already deceived him for countless times man.

But what made him afraid the most was, even if things had come to this point, he himself who was still unable to hate Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. He was afraid once he faced him, he would drown in his sweet speech and honeyed words, thus once again cause the people around him a calamity.

From far, a male teenager in an attendant's attire hurriedly went to their direction. Looking in all directions for a while, he walked to the front of the snack shop, interrupting Duan Shun Jie's train of thought.

"Owner, give me ten buns, also ten bowls of soy milk. Ask someone to come with me to deliver it."

A great business was in front of his eyes, Lao Wang's face in an instant bloomed into happiness, quickly he ordered the still busy Duan Shun Jie.

Duan Shun Jie quickly put down the bowls and chopsticks he was washing and rushed to the shop. Using the clothes on his body he wiped his hands and got ready to attend to the customer. When the four eyes met, he and the youth at the same time were dumbfounded.

"... Chang Er?"

"Gen..." A complete word hadn't had the chance to escape his mouth, Chang Er smartly covered his mouth. Then he watched him using his utmost speed to prepare the ordered things and left together with him.

Walking to a secluded area very far from the shop, Chang Er finally dared to open his mouth to ask: "Heaven, General, It is actually you! How could you become a snack shop waiter?"

Duan Shun Jie had nothing to say in reply, could only shake his head, sighing while speaking: "It is a long story."

Looking at him whole face troubled, Chang Er also didn't insist on asking him, instead, he let out a very excited face and said: "Good timing! Let me take you to meet someone. I guarantee you will be happy if you see him!"

While talking, the two people already approached an ordinary shaped small house with a courtyard. As if he couldn't see Duan Shun Jie's doubtful expression, once entering the house, Chang Er opened his mouth to call out:

"Sir³Guo, Sir Guo hero, quick come and see whose come!"

Hearing his voice, immediately three men with tall and sturdy statures came out from a room. Upon seeing the Duan Shun Jie who was following behind Chang Er they let out a taken by surprise as well as pleasantly surprised expression.

Duan Shun Jie's whole face was also delighted and in a daze. "Good Heaven, Third Brother⁴, Fifth Brother⁴, Ninth

Brother⁴, how can it be you all?"

He had been in Mount Zhongnan⁵ from his childhood until grown up. The Brothers under the same Master had regarded him no different with their own blood brothers. He had never thought that he actually at this time and this place could see the separated for a long time old acquaintances, making his earlier terribly cold heart all of a sudden become warm.

After the four people deeply moved and sobbed together for a while, the Third Brother Cui Xia suddenly slapped his own head and said: "See, I am being too excited, the Master is still waiting inside. If he saw the Seventh Brother, truly couldn't guess how happy would he be!"

"Master also came?" In an instant, innumerable complicated feelings swept over Duan Shun Jie's mind. Not wasting time to clarify, he had rushed to the inner room. Once he had entered the room, he threw himself towards the familiar figure.

"Master!" Throwing himself into Lord of Zhongnan's bosom, Duan Shun Jie was like a child, crying and laughing. In that moment, he could only feel that his lost and helpless heart had a new place to rely on. That kind of meeting of a dear person feeling, even his own father, Ouyang Fa De, was unable to grant him such a feeling.

Patting the shoulder of the special disciple who he personally raised since small until grown up, Guo Yue's feeling was somewhat moved too. With Duan Shun Jie already many years hadn't met, this time ascended the mountain, aside from the intention to rescue the daughter of his old friend, Ouyang Si Qi, searching for the reported missing during the war of Ping'an beloved disciple was actually his main purpose.

Never thought that arriving in Ping'an only for several days, Duan Shun Jie would just appear on his own in front of him, how could he be not be deeply happy.

At the time when the Master and disciple's feelings calmed down with much difficulty, the coming together of ten brothers of the same Master one by one came in to greet the hadn't met for long time Duan Shun Jie. Talking and laughing boisterously for a period a time, everyone could finally talk over their sad feelings caused by parting, then settled down and sat orderly according to their rank of seniority.

"Shun Jie ah, Master heard that when Datong's army defeated the city, you actually disappeared from the camp. Originally I was worried that you had been captured in secret by Datong's army, but now I see it wasn't the case at all. Do tell, what was actually happened?"

When meeting with the brothers, Duan Shun Jie had known he certainly would be faced with this interrogation, but even until now, he still couldn't figure out what was the best answer to give.

Guo Yue saw him whole face hesitating, his face became solemn at once: "Shun Jie, you can honestly tell Master. I heard that you are in close association with the Datong's Seventh Prince. And Jingling, Ping'an, the falling of both cities, Ouyang Fa De's assassination, Ouyang Si Qi's taken as prisoner, was the doing of this Seventh Prince. To the point there was a rumor that you, for the sake of high position and great wealth, had sold Pingnan to him. At first, Master would never have believed no matter what, but today, seeing you like this..."

Duan Shun Jie's heart tightened for a moment. He didn't have the courage to think and guess how his former subordinates in Pingnan's army would evaluate him, an incompetent General who for the second time disappeared from the frontline at a critical juncture. All the more he didn't know that he was rumored to have already sink down to a shameless person who would sell his own father and sister to the enemy for the sake of high position and great wealth.

Things had come to this point, what excuse could he say.

Trampled on by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to the point he was not even worth the dust on the soles of the feet, why did he have to care for other people's opinion. However, he and Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's relationship, what kind of words should he use to explain for other people to clearly understand...even if facing his closest person in this world, his Master, who had brought him up to be a good person, he still absolutely had no courage to narrate the whole facts.

Looking at Duan Shun Jie wore a complicated expression on his face, Guo Yue also became reticent.

He watched Duan Shun Jie as he grew up, of course he would know that he would never betray his people merely for his own glory and position. Certainly there were some facts or circumstances he wished to hide. But why even only half of the truth he also didn't dare to leak out, thus it was a given if he caused people to have doubt.

The bad-tempered Second Brother, Jiang Cheng Zhao, already couldn't stand it and sprung up: "Seventh Brother, you better talk! Everybody knew that that Cruel Prince was brought by you into Ping'an City. He killed the Lord of Pingnan, also captured Ouyang Si Qi, you surely have to present your account to justify yourself!"

Seeing Duan Shun Jie in anguish expression, the always had the best term with him Fourth Brother, Feng Hui Zhong, already couldn't bear it then came to his defense. "Second Brother, when Seventh Brother became acquainted with that Seventh Prince, he didn't know his real status. For this matter, actually he is not to be blamed!"

Guo Yue didn't interfere, he only watched his disciples all talking at once making noise with each other. Waiting until everyone had stopped their mouths, by then he turned to face Duan Shun Jie to ask him: "Shun Jie, then, when did you find out about that Cruel Prince's real identity?"

Duan Shun Jie's heart since earlier was in disorder as if numbed by the noise his brothers made, there was no way he could have even half the courage to play the fool. In an instant he respectfully bowed his body to answer: "Your disciple only found out the night when Datong invaded Jinling."

"It was said that that Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng after coming to Ping'an⁶, resided in your mansion. With your sharpness, how could you not even the slightest bit of the spider's threat⁶ and horse's track⁶ also couldn't see?"

Duan Shun Jie shook his head, became silent. The him at that time had been blinded by love, how could he think of doubting his heart's most beloved person.

"It was due to my foolishness, I never sensed it."

Guo Yue was unable to make up his mind for a while, in the end he nodded his head. He also knew very well this disciple of his always valued feelings the most, never having doubts towards his precious good friend was not strange at all.

"Then I ask you again, after the war in Jinling, have you ever met with him again?"

This one sentence stabbed straight to Duan Shun Jie's heart's sore spot. His face in that instant turned deathly pale, indeed he wouldn't dare to deceive his most respected Master.

"He... Before he attacked Ping'an, indeed he came to meet me." After a period of time, he finally admitted it with a soft voice.

Guo Yue's face became stern at once. His eyes were sharp as knife stabbing straight to Duan Shun Jie's dimmed eyes.

"What did he say to you? What benefit did he promise you to make you retreat and not join the war, to let them take Ping'an City, to bow and give way⁷ for them to take the many years established Pingnan?"

"He... He... "He wanted to say Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng actually didn't need to promise him anything, he was such an

idiot who would even willingly give his life to him. Nevertheless, in front of Guo Yue and his brothers, he truly didn't have the courage to confess about this only could be described as lamentable and ridiculous feeling. Duan Shun Jie could only choose to be silent.

"Then, could it be the truth that you because he promised to give you a great position thus you sold Ping'an City and Si Qi?" Guo Yue's face had become extremely strict. Probably, if Duan Shun Jie nodded his head, he would dispose of his regarded as betrayal disciple at that very moment.

"No. I did not. I really did not... I ... I don't know..." His grievance already reached the utmost point, if not facing Guo Yue, Duan Shun Jie truly would never be willing to explain even if he had to die. The last meeting with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was his life most of the most unbearable to recall memory. Every time he recalled he had the urge to kill himself on the spot, so how could he bear to speak of it to them.

"Then why did you disappear before the battle? To the point the country was ruined huddling up like a turtle drawing in its head and leg⁸ in a corner pretending to be peaceful like nothing had happened!" The Second Brother was obviously unable to stand his hum and haw⁸ manner, sprung up to criticize him.

"I...I..." Had no way to speak out the truth, also couldn't afford to lie to his Master, Duan Shun Jie's heart was really conflicted and hesitated to the greatest point. He knew that his wanting-to-speak-yet-stop caused people's suspicion the most, but he really didn't have the face to reveal the truth.

Looking at the whole face furious Jiang Cheng Zhao and Duan Shun Jie's hesitating and flinching eyes, after a good while, Guo Yue finally heaved out a long sigh, spoke with a cold and strict tone: "Shun Jie, Master also knows that you surely will never because of whatever glory, splendour, wealth and rank betray the entire Pingnan. But other people wouldn't think the same. By now, Master could only give you one chance to atone for your crime by doing a meritorious act. Only if you personally kill that Cruel Prince and rescue Ouyang Si Qi, to avenge the Lord of Pingnan, other people absolutely couldn't have anything to say anymore. If not... could only wish you don't blame Master for being heartless!"

Duan Shun Jie, upon hearing this, knowing that even the Master who always had believed firmly without any doubt⁹ towards him already suspected him, suspected that he had betrayed Pingnan for Datong, from the bottom of his heart, he was filled with agony at once. When he wanted to distinguish truth from falsehood, he saw that his Master had closed his eyes and waved his hand, signaling him to withdraw.

Knowing that insisting to tell the truth was useless, if he delayed killing Xuan Yuan with his own hand for one more day, the more people would suspect that he and him were villains colluding together¹⁰. However, killing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng with his own hands, no matter how, it was something he couldn't do...

Parting with his Master and leaving the small house, the whole heart lost not knowing which way to go Duan Shun Jie finally realized that he originally had nowhere to go. Shilly-shally for half a day, in the end he headed back to direction of that small snack shop.

Upon his return, Lao Wang inevitably blamed him for leaving for such a long while, but seeing his face color was not right, he finally didn't say anything anymore.

The snack shop profit was slight, life of course was not easy. The time when Duan Shun Jie finished tidying up and clearing the table from the last group of guests, the sky was already pitch-dark. He casually fetched some water to wipe his body and change into clean clothes before he climbed into his bed.

Said it was a bed, in fact it was not more than a simple shakedown built temporarily inside the shop, extremely simple and crude. The Duan Shun Jie whose feelings were in disorder without any main threads certainly would be harder to fall asleep.

Unceasingly he played with the cut through iron as if it were a mud's¹¹ dagger on his chest --- it was given by his Master just before he left. The time limit the Lord of Zhongnan gave him was three days. Within these three days, if not taking Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's head to him, he would be as good as admitting himself as Datong's spy. At that time, he wouldn't be regarded as the Lord of Zhongnan's disciple anymore, also, would be included in the list of Pingnan's target of revenge.

On one side was the one who brought him up like his own father, Lord of Pingnan. On the other side was the one who had repeatedly deceived him and shoved him into this hopeless situation, his beloved person...

Duan Shun Jie's rationality completely understood which one he should choose, but the deepest part of his heart had another voice.

Even if being deceived and harmed for ten thousand times, how could he kill Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng with his own hands?

Even if he couldn't obtain his favor and his love, Duan Shun Jie's prayer was to wish and hope for Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to continue to live in happiness and joy. How could he have the heart to let the him who was obsessed with ambition with his lofty aspirations unrealized, just like that, collapse by his hands?

The night was long and endless, Duan Shun Jie was not the least sleepy, could only open his eyes widely till the sky became bright...

The more he wanted to stop the time, the quicker the time passed.

No matter if Duan Shun Jie was willing or unwilling, in a blink of an eye, the day had come to the last day of the three days' time limit.

Countless conflicts were interlocking in his mind, but even until this very moment he still couldn't manage a single vivid detail. Duan Shun Jie also loathed his own indecisiveness. Before his eyes, the sky gradually turned to pitch black, he could only choose to go to Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's residence first then decide afterwards.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's residence was not at all hard to find. He was now residing in the Lord of Pingnan's temporary residence. Of course that place was overly familiar for Duan Shun Jie.

Leaning on the roof of the sleeping quarter, Duan Shun Jie diligently held his breath, little by little, slowly he lifted the tile on the roof of the room to look inside the room.

Upon a glance, he almost fainted by the stimulating obscene scenery inside the room --- Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was intertwining with three, four beautiful naked young men and girls on the extravagantly decorated large bed.

He was using a jade stem with the thickness of a baby arm to thrust into the backyard of a boy. That boy had an extremely lovely cute face, but his whole face was making an extreme lewd expression when he was being played with, his mouth unceasingly let out a charming moan, as if he was demanding Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to quickly enter his body. The remaining two girls were wearing an intoxicated face to attend to Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng with their mouths. There were also many strange instruments scattered on the bed...

Duan Shun Jie was unable to have another glance. A stream of unstoppable bitterness gushed straight to his heart, made him subconsciously biting hard on his lips, yet, he still couldn't help the sound of a sharp gasp escaping.

At the moment his breathing spell became disordered, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng seemingly had realized immediately. Very fast he draped an exquisitely embroidered sleeping robe on his body, he waved his hand, the youths although having a face that said they still wanted to continue still hurriedly took their clothes and left.

"Who is that? Come out." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's voice was cold, completely without any trace that just a second ago

he was still immersed in the realm of perverted game of pleasure.

Duan Shun Jie stiffened in an instant, he calculated again and again, but not in the least bit he considered to be found out by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng this fast.

“Duan Shun Jie! I know it is you, come out now!” What was more shocking, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng unexpectedly called out his name.

Since his name was being directly mentioned, Duan Shun Jie couldn't continue pretending to be indifferent anymore. Quietly without any noise he flipped over from the window into the sleeping quarter. Duan Shun Jie with his complicated eyes appeared in front of Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng.

“It is actually you. It really has been quite a while!” Without making his feelings apparent, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng put on a slightly cold smile as he lightly said it.

Duan Shun Jie's feelings couldn't be more complicated --- Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's body only had a piece of thin and flimsy sleeping robe, basically unable to cover the traces of the joyous moment left on his fair body. In Duan Shun Jie's eyes, it was as if a sharp arrow had been stabbed straight to his heart, caused him to be pained to the point he unable to utter a word.

“What? Have you become mute?” Facing Duan Shun Jie, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng would be handling a butcher's cleaver with ease¹² forever, his manner was calm and leisure to the point of making one's hair stand up in anger¹². “Or is it because you saw the great fun just now so you are shocked and couldn't say a word?”

Duan Shun Jie watched him slowly approaching, the nervous mind since earlier had become a blank sheet, could only desperately grab tightly the dagger in his sleeve, using all of his strength he reminded himself that today's mission was to assassinate this poisonous like a snake man who had destroyed everything.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng seemed as if he didn't notice Duan Shun Jie's nervousness and rigidity at all, not in the least cared, he extended his hand to push him to sit on the messy couch, his other hand was taking the covered with clothes jade stem.

“Duan Shun Jie, you haven't met with this one, have you? Do you want me to play with you to stimulate you?” He pressed closer, the distance was very near as if stuck on Duan Shun Jie's face.

A smear of crimson red floated up on Duan Shun Jie's cheek. Helplessly tried to avoid, he retreaded backwards, but his right wrist was gripped firmly by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng.

“If you couldn't play, just don't bring this dangerous thing on your body, hadn't your father taught you about this?” From Duan Shun Jie's sleeve, he drew out the dagger. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng with a mocking face tossed the dagger to the corner of the room, then with an ease he pressed him under his body, the other hand already slipped inside his trousers.

“No! Don't do this! Don't touch me!” He wanted to shout don't use that pair of dirty hands which had just touched another boy to touch him, but he realized, the him who had that kind of thought was like a jealous wife, thus he could only desperately struggle. However, the most fragile part of a man was completely in the palm of his opponent, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng only needed to pinch it hard to hurt him to the point his whole person curling up.

“Come to see me, you only need to wash your ass clean, no need for whatever dagger, my 'dagger' could be lent to you, Duan Great General!” Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng intentionally rubbed his manhood against Duan Shun Jie's upper thigh for a couple of light rub, letting Duan Shun Jie to fully feel his still half in high-spirited state of erection.

“...don't be like this...let me go...” Once he made contact with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, that usually calm with self-restraint Duan Shun Jie was as if had vanished without any traces, remained only a pitiful man with helpless limbs in

front of his twisted-natured beloved person.

He tried to break free from Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's suppression but got pushed and pressed down to the bed instead. Then when he tried to use his strength to revolt, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng forcefully knead and pinched his lower body, pained him to the point of powerless.

Seeing that Duan Shun Jie had lost his will to resist, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng coldly laughed and twisted both his hands to the back of his body, untying his belt to bind him. Following next he harshly ripped his whole clothes to reveal a healthy wheat-colored body.

Aware that Duan Shun Jie's whole body was quivering, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng did not change his expression at all. The slender fingers were caressing the inner side of the big thigh which he previously branded with a tattoo. Unexpectedly, he noticed that the word 'cheap' had been replaced by a deep scar of a flat iron.

He could feel Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's fingers lingered on that burnt mark. His movements slowly called back the whole scene of the wound in Duan Shun Jie's heart. It was as if he returned to that miserable self of his, to the tragic moment when he used a burning flat iron to erase the humiliation mark on his body, returned to that desperate self of him who didn't wish to stay in this mortal world even for a moment or a second...

As long as he faced this man, seemingly the world even the colors had changed. Trying for innumerable times to coldly respond to his teasing, however, once he was touched by him, even the deepest part of his body as if it had become weak and soft.

He could feel Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's fingers slowly stroke pass the cleavage of his buttocks, slide in towards the space between his buttocks. Duan Shun Jie couldn't help but hold his breath when the icy-cold slender finger entered his inner body, but because of his malice suppression, he let out a muffled groan.

"This part or yours is really missing me... what, you saw that little boy just now, didn't you? He is the son of Ping'an wealthiest family. Initially, compared to you, he is more virtuous and more noble. Just now on the bed, moaning unrestrained... Didn't know he is more lewd or you? Hm?" Abruptly added the thrusting fingers to three fingers, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was practically with evil-intention humiliating Duan Shun Jie.

Duan Shun Jie of course knew Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was mocking him, but his since earlier had familiar with the pleasure of anal intercourse body had no way to resist this kind of tantalizing. From the deepest part of his body unceasingly sent forth the spell by spell pleasure, tormenting him and made him unable to say any words to retort.

This kind of him, death would be better for him! This unbearable to embrace, shameless and despair kind of feeling... In a daze, he attempted to focus on Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's face, but in front of his eyes was only a blurred vision, it was as if in this moment's mental of state, he couldn't see anything clearly.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng towards Duan Shun Jie perplexed in anguish expression was like looking but not seeing¹³. Taking out his fingers, he took the tossed by the side jade stem.

"Ahh..." In his hazy state, his backyard was thrust mercilessly with that baby's arm thickness jade stem by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. Even if Duan Shun Jie was in his strong self, he also couldn't help but cry out a blood-curdling screech.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng remained unmoved, still with his cold and calm face played with the jade stem in his hand to move back and forth, thrust and pull, with each thrust he brought it to Duan Shun Jie's innermost part, enjoying his writhing as if dying struggling every time it entered and pulled back.

Jade stem compared to manhood of course was much longer, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng heartlessly pushed it inside forcefully. Duan Shun Jie didn't know whether this lifeless icy-cold lethal weapon already injured his internal organs

or not, he could only feel from his anus to his rectum and even the entire of his abdominal cavity was having this burning like pain. He could only desperately writhe his body in attempt to alleviate a little of his pain.

Probably wanted to see Duan Shun Jie's anguish expression, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng actually lifted Duan Shun Jie's pair of thigh while still making the stabbing and pulling movement, pressed it against him, he continued with jade stem's repeatedly casual yet obscene movement.

Because of the laying on his back position as well as being entered to the deepest part of his body, Duan Shun Jie even the strength to scream he didn't have anymore, could only hold in his breath to endure the agony of delicate inner wall being wreck when he was still alive, could only feel the place that was trailed by the jade stem because of the extrusion and the friction had almost split open.

Maybe already bored with this little monotonous play, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng finally pulled out the stem and tossed it aside, taking his since earlier already swollen to become crimson in color manhood pushing it straight into Duan Shun Jie's inner body.

"How loose!! Truly not interesting at all!" Ridiculed by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's following speech, he was upset to the point of shivering from head to toe. Duan Shun Jie clearly aware that his inner wall had been overly instigated by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to the extent he was slacker compared to the common person, in addition, he had been fiddled with by that baby's arm thickness jade stem for quite a while. This moment, his muscle could only maintain the previous shape unable to completely wrap Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's penis¹⁴. Letting him irritatingly alternate the thrusting angle, also couldn't make it shrink back.

Perhaps to show Duan Shun Jie how boring their sexual intercourse was, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's thrusting and pulling movement appeared to be extremely slow with long interval. That not in the least bit excited mechanical front and back motion of his swaying waist caused Duan Shun Jie's broken pride to completely fall apart. But Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng just like that slowly swung for almost an hour but hadn't showed any indication of ejaculating, made Duan Shun Jie's tears almost flow out.

"Cut it! Really completely boring! Playing with you is still not any better than playing with a wonderful whore." Taking out his still swelling erected manhood from Duan Shun Jie's inner body, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng coldly threw a word, following afterwards, using his hand he stroke his still stiffly erected manhood in a high-speed. After a while, he shot the whole of hot fluid on Duan Shun Jie's face.

Looking at the sprayed with obscene fluid face of Duan Shun Jie making a completely unable to believe expression, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng laughed coldly, at the same time he unfastened the rope binding him, one foot kicked him out of the bed.

"You think you are still the Lord of Pingnan's Great General? You are not more than a slut who had been played rotten by a man! Get lost!"

With his torn almost couldn't cover his body clothes he ran wildly out from that temporary residence, but only out for several Li, Duan Shun Jie already felt a pain as if his stomach was being wrung, hard to carry on. He randomly sought for a secluded area inside the forest by the side of the road, kneeling down on the ground, he threw up.

Looking on helplessly the vomited food remnants mixed with more and more fresh blood, Duan Shun Jie definitely didn't have the intention to stop, even if the dark red of fresh blood had soiled the whole of his front robe.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's cruel word was still echoing in his ears, the grievance tears in the end drip-dropping like mad.

His infatuation from the beginning till the very end was nothing more than him overestimating his own worth inviting his own disgrace. Until this point, the him who already completely had no value to be made use of, indeed still infatuated and vainly hoped to obtain Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's affection.

Even he himself already couldn't recognize this lowly to the point not having the least bit of self-esteem man.

Finally it had come to an end... Finally he could free himself from the heartache that every day and every night pestered him, gotten rid of that person's cruel smiling face, leaving this icy-cold with nothing to be attached world.

Before he departed to the Temporary Residence, Duan Shun Jie had secretly taken the poison which would show effects after several hours. He definitely went to meet Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng with the determination to die.

Actually he had thought, he didn't want to go on living alone after killing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, at that time, Duan Shun Jie was as if he couldn't think straight anymore.

But until the very end, he still couldn't make a move, couldn't make a move to make this ruthless but beautiful man forever disappear from this world. His love and attachment towards him already burned fiercely to the extent even he himself was frightened.

At any rate, the staying on the ground Duan Shun Jie had lost the face to see the person who brought him up, Lord of Zhongnan, didn't have the courage to face the bitter and hateful expression of the people who had cared for him. At this moment, giving up, he justified it as to break free, actually more like running away.

Feeling that he almost vomited the whole of his blood out from his body, the long awaited darkness finally arrived.

So, this is how death feels like? Feeling the long awaited peacefulness, Duan Shun Jie's consciousness finally completely left his body. Slowly fell to the icy-cold muddy ground.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 9

Notes

- 1) To forget and not bring recriminations (id): To let bygones be bygones, forgive someone's misdeeds.
- 2) Lao Wang老王 :Literally means, Old King. But I don't think they refer to him as King. Wang might be his surname, so it is Old Wang. But... Old Wang doesn't sound so good, therefore, I went with the Chinese pronunciation, Lao Wang. Tee hee... XD .
- 3) Chang Er was used 大侠 (Daxia) to address the one he called out to. Literally means: knight, swordsman, noble warrior. A very common term to address people who practiced martial arts in Jianghu.
- 4) Duan Shun Jie was using Big Brother to address the Third and Fifth Brother while using Younger Brother to address the Ninth since he was the Seventh in the Brothers under the same Master.
- 5) Zhongnan Mountain, near Xi'an. Also known as the Taiyi Mountain.
- 6) The Chinese text said it was Ping'an, but I think it was a typo since Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was residing in Duan Shun Jie's mansion in Jinling, not Ping'an. Or maybe the Master simply confused the place. LOL... XD. Spider's threat and horse's track: clues, traces, tiny hints (of a secret).
- 7) To bow and give way (id): to surrender something readily.
- 8) Huddling up like a turtle drawing in its head and leg (id): withdraw into passive defense. To hum and haw (id): to mumble as if hiding something, hesitate in speech.
- 9) To believe firmly without any doubt (id): absolute certainty about something/someone.
- 10) Villains colluding together (id): to work hand in glove with somebody for nefarious ends.
- 11) Cut through iron as if it were mud (id): said of an exceptionally sharp sword/knife/dagger.
- 12) Handling a butcher's cleaver with ease (id): to do something skillfully and easily. To make one's hair stand in anger (id): to raise people hackles.
- 13) Looking but not seeing: to ignore.
- 14) PENIS!! Yup! P-E-N-I-S. Finally the author used the word 'penis' instead of: desire, manhood, erection like how the author used to describe that part. Tee hee...

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 10 - End of Book One



luxiufer.livejournal.com/38124.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 10 (Epilogue of Book one)



It was said, on the only bridge which led to the underworld, Meng Po ¹ had guarded it for several thousand years. Particularly for the passing men and women with unfinished secular fate, giving them a bowl of Meng Po soup, to enable them to forget the events happening in the past, gaining a whole new blank memory.

When Duan Shun Jie regained his consciousness, for a moment he had the illusion of misorientation.

But when his line of sight fell on the standing by the window figure, his heart couldn't help but become taut --- even if it was only a natural and spontaneous quick glance, he already could recognize that caused him to have this heartache back figure.

Wasn't fortunate enough to drink the Meng Po's soup, the him at the present was still the same cowardly weak and powerless self, still remained in the same cruel world which didn't allowed him to make his feelings come true.

Maybe he could feel Duan Shun Jie's gaze, the originally showing his back in front of the window Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng slowly turned his body. The magnificent radiance of the setting sun draped on his body, like the jade clothes sewn with golden thread to set off his perfect face and figure, it was as if he was not a person that belonged to this filthy mortal world.

The two people remained silent face to face for a while. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng slowly walked to the bed side. Looking at his expressionless face closing in, Duan Shun Jie was ashamed and alarmed to the extreme. If not because of his limbs and his body was limp, numb and painful, he would have jumped out the bed and forced his way through to escape.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's expression was not the same as usual, he was looking at Duan Shun Jie in a strange mood, as if he was continuously pondering on something, it felt so much like this was the very first time he met the man in front of him.

"Why did you want to commit suicide? Also, who actually was the one who asked you to kill me?" But once he opened his mouth, that kind of stabbing straight to the sore spot bluntness let Duan Shun Jie realize that he was still the same kind of completely unaffected by other people's feelings abominable evil man.

Unable to answer his questions, also couldn't afford to meet his eyes, Duan Shun Jie could only choose to avoid him, wordlessly turned over his body to show his back to Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. He was unable to meet that pair of snatching away all of his love and devotion's eyes.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was not one to overlook nor spare ² : "Dispatched spies to follow you in hopes to catch a few of Pingnan's surviving members, instead, they took back a dying at a not far away place person. If not because of me, by now you would not be in this world anymore. For this reason, you are still unwilling to tell me?"

So him still being alive was all the result of Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's wanted to make secret inquiries. Duan Shun Jie had the impulse to laugh bitterly.

The flaming passionate feeling inside of him seemingly had been diluted by the poison he drank. The him at the present had been disheartened, to the point he didn't want to speak even half of the word.

"Do not want to speak, do you?" Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was forming an astonished like state raising one of his eye's brows. Calm and unhurried, he sat on the bed, "In the Palace, there are many methods to make one open their mouth..."

Seeing Duan Shun Jie revealed a loathed expression, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng slightly laughed and continued his speech: "But I also don't want to use those methods, I still have another method to make you beg to tell me."

Without saying anything anymore, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng had leaned his body to pull open the covering on Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's body's thin quilt³--- the quilt down, his body only had a piece of flimsy underclothes. Looking at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng stretching his hand to take off that piece of underclothes, Duan Shun Jie became anxious at once. Intending to push away Xuan Yuan's hand but he realized he surprisingly didn't have the strength even to move half of his finger.

"You..." He was angry as well as anxious, helplessly looking at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng pulled down the underclothes to his knee.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's manner of speaking was extremely relaxed: "Oh, forgot to tell you! Even if the poison has been cleared, but there is still a little residue, in this two or three days, having your hands and legs paralysis, i'm afraid that it is unavoidable."

While he spoke, he was taking off his outer robe and getting on the bed. Pulling Duan Shun Jie's pair of legs and rounding them on his waist, the posture was extremely obscene and stirring.

Although his limbs were numb and hard to budge, Duan Shun Jie still could clearly feel the huge tip on his hip that placed on his backyard's entrance. Watching him with calculated and unhurried steps⁴ directed his fingers to smear the scented oil, Duan Shun Jie had a driven into insanity kind of feeling.

Still unable to forget the humiliation from all of his dedicated feelings being trampled on and insulted, Duan Shun Jie couldn't stand to be reclined in this posture under Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, yet, he didn't know how to prevent his impudent assault. His heart was burning with impatience, at this moment, even half of a complete sentence he couldn't utter.

The attitude appeared to be considerably in earnest, earnestly thrusting in Duan Shun Jie's inner body, slowly slid in and out, upon seeing Duan Shun Jie revealing a gasping in dismay expression, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng let out the seemingly having an accomplishment smiling face.

"Tell me, if not, I might call someone to come. I think Xiao Si Qi must really want to see you..." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's evilness was the same as in the past. His hateful smiling face more or less had evoked a little of Duan Shun Jie's will to resist.

"Don't tell me you... Aren't you more afraid than me about losing all your standing and reputation?" Feeling that Xuan Yuan's filled with ill intention fingers pressing on the most sensitive spot in his inner part, Duan Shun Jie desperately tried to hold in his gasp, remained unable to complete his sentence.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's response was bursting out in haha laughter, "Duan Shun Jie ah Duan Shun Jie. You are said to be an adult, why are you still this naive! Letting Ouyang Si Qi know, what's the big deal of it. She, for this lifetime, wouldn't have the chance to spread out any unpleasant words about me!"

Upon hearing his speech, Duan Shun Jie's heart violently gave a wrench, his face also turned to a ghastly pale. Among all the matters, Si Qi was the completely unfortunate one. Being involved in all of scheme between him and Xuan Yuan, consequently down from heaven, once a beloved daughter, reduced to today an abandoned wife.

"You can't treat her like that! She is still conceiving your child. Treating her like that, don't you feel you are being a

little too cruel?" Duan Shun Jie, no matter what, wouldn't be able to turn a blind eye for the suffering of his pitiful sister.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng laughed, taking out his fingers from the already slack open tunnel with a careless manner, in one go, he thrust in his already swelling and stiff sex organ.

"Don't you feel the you now still having the heart to mind about others is very laughable? Concentrate a little." Patting Duan Shun Jie's buttocks, he appeared to not have the intention to discuss any longer, only minded to rock his waist to pursue the peak of pleasure.

Duan Shun Jie gritted his teeth in hopes of enduring the languid pleasure gushing out from the inner part of his body, only this had already exhausted all of his strength, he had no strength left to discuss with Xuan Yuan about Ouyang Si Qi's affairs.

The room was filled with the ambiguous panting and the sound of body rubbing together. Until Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng vigorously shot in his spurting hot bodily fluid into the depths of his body, until then the sound that nearly drove Duan Shun Jie to insanity could be said as quieted down.

Casually put in order his clothing, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng also helped Duan Shun Jie to sit.

Two people intimately leaned closely against each other, Duan Shun Jie, in an instant, as if had a kind of illusion. It appeared as if he was still in that time, in the Yan's family house, with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng still being affectionately and passionately in love, the time when they shared the sweetest sluggish moment after their lovemaking session.

His rationality immediately reminded him: Before his eyes was Datong's Cruel Prince, Xuan Yuan. Not that warm and mysterious Yan Xi Cheng. Although harsh, yet, reality was reality. Even if he tried in every possible way to escape it, the reality still wouldn't be changed.

"It could be said that we are husband and wife..." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng unexpectedly spurted out a word that was so unlike him to say, "Towards each other apparently need not to be excessively with swords drawn and bows bent."⁵

Duan Shun Jie felt that he was a bit strange, couldn't help but shoot him a glance.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng only lightly laughed, then continued : "Now is exactly the time that our Datong is doing some recruitment. If I say I am willing to let you stay by my side, then, do you agree or not to lend your service to Datong?"

Never crossed his mind that he actually would raise this kind of preposition, Duan Shun Jie, taken by surprise, in an instant he was stunned on the spot.

"Don't you want me to be kind to Ouyang Si Qi? As long as you give your consent, wanting me to accept her as my concubine is not a difficult matter. You also don't have to feel guilty towards her all the time."

The originally wanted to speak out refusal, instantly by Xuan Yuan's suggestion was being swallowed back. Indeed, Pingnan's decline was already irreversible, although turning to Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's camp was an unforgivable betrayal conduct, however, if by doing this he could give back his sister's happiness, apparently this was not a bad deal at all.

Actually, toward Xuan Yuan's deceitfulness, he was a little bit afraid. He honestly couldn't understand how could this kind of Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng suggest this preposition.

Truly afraid that he would nod his head just like that, then afterwards, he would have to face the more miserable reality.

Looking at Duan Shun Jie's hesitation, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng of course knew what's going on. He also didn't utter any

word, waiting for Duan Shun Jie to make up his mind and come to a decision.

Duan Shun Jie naturally would be hesitant. His status and Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's status was that of enemies, not friend at all, all the more, the present circumstances was already worst to the point it couldn't get any worse anymore. Perhaps he really needed to give up the struggle, to see and wait if there was still a possibility to fight for the happiness of his one and only blood relative in this world.

Turning his head, looking at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's smiling eyes, Duan Shun Jie's heart was filled with bitterness. Maybe he had chosen the most suffering way, yet, to be able to stay by this person's side even for a little while more, there was a kind of faint fascination to it.

Seeing that Duan Shun Jie slowly nodded his head, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng let out a smile at once.

Since earlier he had known Duan Shun Jie unable to resist him, after all, he had loved him to the point he had no way to free himself, right?

Gently on the healthy and strong male body in his bosom printed a gentle kiss, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng as if gave out an indefinite promise.

Three months after Datong attacked Ping'an, the formerly Pingnan's Commander in Chief, presently the Lord of Pingnan, Duan Shun Jie, officially surrendered to Datong. Also, the formerly Pingnan's Princess, Ouyang Si Qi also officially became among one of the Seventh Prince, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's many concubines.

Lord of Pingnan's surrender and changing side lifted a mighty uproar in all level of society. For quite some times, Duan Shun Jie, these three words had become the synonym of ungratefulness and shameless betrayal, to be everyone's looked askance at. However, there was also several revolting armies, being afraid of Datong's imposing momentum when they attacked Pingnan, surrendered to the imperial court on their own accord.

The unwilling to surrender several fairly equipped revolting armies, under the command of the Cruel Prince Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng and the originally Lord of Pingnan Duan Shun Jie joining hands together, many were being wiped off. For a period of time, the originally with each passing day already declined Datong's Empire as if gradually regained the vitality. Once again, emitted their noticable imposing Empire's loftiness.

---- End of Book One ----

Notes

1. Meng Po (孟婆): The Meng can be a surname, but can also mean the first. The Po here means an old woman, or a woman in a certain occupation. So, I left it at Meng Po.
2. Not to overlook nor spare (id): unwilling to forgive.
3. This part, I definitely think this is a typo. But the both sources of Chinese text that I found both stated this. 軒轅熙誠已經傾身扯開了覆在軒轅熙誠身上的薄被. I think this part should be: Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng had leaned his body to pull open the covering on Duan Shun Jie's body's thin quilt. However, since the Chinese text had Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng instead of Duan Shun Jie, I will also leave it at that.
4. With calculated and unhurried steps (id): slow and deliberate, leisurely.
5. With swords drawn and bows bent (id): a state of mutual hostility.

Fallen Hero Translation Prologue of Book Two



luxiufer.livejournal.com/38232.html

The Fallen Hero Book Two Prologue

Duan Shun Jie was no more than a skilled usable valuable piece of pawn. Letting him stay by his side, inevitably there would be a day to put him to good use.

However, even Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng himself couldn't comprehend, why Duan Shun Jie would rather shoulder the bad reputation of betraying his country, would rather endure the all and various kind of malice imposing on his body, but still insisted in staying by his side.

Convinced himself that this was merely an act in a play, he used the more and more crueler way to attack Duan Shun Jie's heart.

Why didn't he withdraw? Why could he still love him?

"That's because I want to love you... I could never hate you."

This kind of total devotion regardless of anything type of love, if only it could really last forever...



Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 11



luxiufer.livejournal.com/38465.html

The Fallen Hero Book Two – Tears of The Hero.

The Fallen Hero Chapter 11



The moon gradually raised up high, the night's color already thickened.

Duan Shun Jie sat alone in the tent, by himself, staring at the candle light in front of him, day-dreaming --- watching a stupid little moth, seemed like it was dazzled by the flickering candle light, flapping its frail wings intending to charge into the middle of the flame, he couldn't help but heave a sigh, lightly waved his sleeve, wanted to shoo the moth away...

"Shun Jie." The familiar voice caused him to stop his movement. When he was reminded of the moth again, he was right in time to see that small moth tumbled into the flame, struggling for a while before he turned into a regiment of burned black and fell to the ground, vanished from this mortal world.

"What's wrong, haven't slept yet?" Even if since long he had uncovered his Prince of Datong's status to Duan Shun Jie, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's smiling face remained the same fresh and pure without any worry for the mundane affairs. In Duan Shun Jie's eyes, this made him unable to stop a spell of stirring affection mixed up with a spell of complex pain.

Silently gritted his teeth, Duan Shun Jie tried to use his normal expression when facing Xuan Yuan.

Following Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to attack the occupying on southwest strategic point insurrectionary army, Jiang Rong, already almost a month. They had pinned down Jiang Rong on this small Tian'nan City for nearly ten days. The victory was within sight, his mood still couldn't be relaxed. Within the Datong's army, no matter what, he was merely an out of place outsider. Wherever he went to, he still could feel the peculiar eyes they casted on his back. In the Datong's army's mind, he would be forever a mere greedy for life afraid of death¹, sold his friends for glory, Pingnan's betrayer.

Even though using the deed of Ouyang Si Qi's safety as an excuse to stay by Xuan Yuan's side, he always felt that his heart² seemingly had drifted further and further from him. Duan Shun Jie, by each passing day had become even more desperate for this love, yet he didn't have a single person he could recount about his miserable loneliness.

Most probably he could see the sadness in Duan Shun Jie's eyes, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn't say much words anymore, he just slowly closed in, gently put his hand on his shoulder.

"Go to sleep. Tomorrow afternoon, I will issue an order to attack. Tonight, we..." The last word was said with the utmost lowest voice to the point it couldn't be heard, the thin and long fair fingers were like a feather caressing Duan Shun Jie's neck, causing him to be unable to stop the slight tremble all over his body for a while.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng softly laughed, amused by his sensitiveness. He simply leaned the whole of his weight on his back, his pair of warm hands intimately circled on his neck, said: "Are you being bashful? Let's go to bed, I am also tired..."

Duan Shun Jie being as slow witted as he was, he still could feel the teasing implication in his words. Wanted to refuse but the palpitation of his heart made him unable to say a complete sentence, could only allow him to pull him towards the couch by the side.

“Xi Cheng, tomorrow we are going to attack, tonight...” Didn’t dare to use too much force to refuse the pulling his sash Xuan Yuan, Duan Shun Jie attempted to use verbal refusal. However, the hadn’t escaped from his mouth artificial speech from the intertwined wet and moist spittle had become a layer of muddled speech.

His rationality was stirred into an utter confusion. The lingering on his neck, front of the chest, passionate kisses made him as if emitted a high fever like heat from all over his body. Could only tightly hold on Xuan Yuan, allowed him to bend and twist his body into a weird posture.

Being entered from this posture caused Duan Shun Jie pain to the point of sweating. But his self-honor made him choose to clutch tightly on the bed sheet enduring Xuan Yuan’s rough manner. Perhaps the unlubricated body of a man was actually too tight and difficult to be entered, he heard Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng’s rude swear, taking out his already entered more than a half manhood with a sudden force --- Duan Shun Jie couldn’t help his groaning voice because of this action.

The icy-cold scented oil, by the merciless fingers, was being shoved to the innermost part of his body in a quick pace. Xuan Yuan roughly stirred it for a while before he continued to pierce in with his erection.

The connected place of the two people was flaming hot as if burning, Duan Shun Jie’s heart still remained cold. This connection, no matter how one looked it at was merely a conduct of Xuan Yuan who couldn’t find a woman to release his desire during military campaign --- also, in order to preserve the extent of their relationship, he had bet with his whole life³.

In this fated game of gambling to be left with nothing, his best winnings would only be the prolonged time for him to stay in this game. Didn’t dare to think about what would happen to him if the day when he had to leave had come. As long as he had this kind of chance to be together, he would be willing to throw away all of the bargaining chips in his hands.

Hearing that their panting gradually became louder, Duan Shun Jie, because of being pushed unceasingly to the innermost part of his body, was no longer able to bear it and let out his moans. The panting was of pleasure mixed with pain, made him drown in the surging tide of desire. His arms little by little lost the strength to bear the weight of his body, he could then only lean over the entire of his body to lie prostate, allowing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to ram vigorously without stopping. In his close to weeping moaning and panting in pain state, he could feel the approaching surging up climax...

The tide of pleasure hadn’t been completely subdued, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng already took himself out from his body without whatever lingering feelings. Hearing the ‘xishuo’⁴ sound of wearing the clothes coming from his back, Duan Shun Jie still didn’t have the courage to turn his head to have a look --- he was afraid to see Xuan Yuan’s indifferent expression, even more afraid to face the reality that between the two of them, there was only him one-sidedly investing his feelings in this relationship.

“Tomorrow, during the attack, you need to give a good performance.” Xuan Yuan had worn his clothes, whispering with the all satisfied like a fully fed cat’s voice, patting Duan Shun Jie’s bare back, said, “Have a good rest. I’m going back now.”

Seeing the tall shadow which was reflected by the dimmed candle light in the tent gradually shrank then vanished, Duan Shun Jie slowly curled up his body into a small circular shape, it was as if only by doing this could he withstand the slowly spreading in his heart’s coldness.

Jian Rong’s army’s last resistance was not as heroic as what they had imagined at all. The already being tormented by hunger for almost ten days insurrectionary army, under Datong’s frenzy attack, could not even hold on for more than two hours, and the perched high for many years, Jiang Rong, when he saw the irredeemable situation, committed suicide. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, once again, with his unparalleled military accomplishment, proved himself

to be the Datong Dynasty's irreplaceable warlord.

When the report of the victory reached Tong'an, Feng Zong's happiness naturally would be beyond compare. Began from the defeat and disperse of Pingnan's troop, the comparatively large in power and influence rebellion armies within the nation were being put down one by one. The domination of Datong's Imperial Dynasty which was originally already on the verge of collapsing, seemingly became firm again. The Seventh Prince's shocking military accomplishment caused Feng Zong's yearning towards this son of his to be increased, even to issue a decree to summon him back to Capital to spend the Chinese New Year together.

Continuously went on expedition, the Datong's army upon hearing the news that they could temporary take a break, of course would be cheering excitedly. Even Pei Jin Tian, the rather old General, because of the possibility to reunite with his family, was secretly delighted. Maybe, the one and only in this entire Datong's army who was not willing to hear this news was Duan Shun Jie alone.

"What? Could see Ouyang Si Qi, you don't feel happy?" Could temporarily get away from the continuous expedition, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn't show whether he was happy or not, still the same kind of cool and calm indifferent expression. From the feast of celebrating the victory, he came to Duan Shun Jie's tent. He appeared to unintentionally and leisurely mention the name that could hurt Duan Shun Jie's feeling.

Knowing that if he let out a pained expression he would only make this ill-willed man happy, Duan Shun Jie could only wordlessly smile bitterly --- Ouyang Si Qi was indeed his one and only blood relative in this world, however, he really didn't want to face her, who was conceiving Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's child, didn't want to face her, who held resentfulness towards himself.

"I see that you aren't quite happy? Don't want to see her?" Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng drank empty the wine in his hand, continued with his ridiculing tone, "I heard that she and the females in my manor don't get along well. Her temper seems to be as big as her belly."

Had no way to ignore the flashing sharp agony in his heart upon hearing the term of "The females of the manor", Duan Shun Jie understood that he had no position nor qualification to be jealous, yet, he still had no way to block up the bitterness from spreading in his heart.

Regarding Xuan Yuan's affection, it was like drinking a cup of magnificent poisonous wine. The first time it entered the mouth, the sweetness would make one melt. After entering the stomach, it would become more and more bitter, more and more astringent, ultimately, it would be unavoidable that the intestines would be pierced through, the stomach would rot. It was the price of experiencing such luscious sweetness.

"Be at ease! Yours and theirs flavor are not same. After we reach Tong'an, can't say precisely, I might have the mood to look for you." Lightly pinched on Duan Shun Jie's cheek, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn't hide his slightly ridiculing tone.

Knowing that he was ridiculing him as the lowest and worthless person who would come as soon as he called and would go as soon as he asked, Duan Shun Jie, even half of retorting sentence didn't escape his mouth --- in front of Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, he could only be like a scarecrow, no matter how he forced and insulted him, he would only stay silent without striking back, persistently and painfully endured until he was thoroughly beaten into a withered grass.

Although Xuan Yuan said it like that, yet, from the moment the army began to march back to Capital, he didn't touch Duan Shun Jie anymore. When the two of them met, his eyes also would slide from him in no time. Clearly he understood that following the closer they got to Tong'an, the further Xuan Yuan had drifted apart, still, Duan Shun Jie could only choose to be quiet. Everyday he would mechanically follow the marching army.

When others didn't pay attention, he would stealthily seek for that seemingly unrivalled honorable man with his eyes.

Duan Shun Jie understood by heart, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn't love him at all, perhaps also didn't love whomever. He began to engage in a relationship with him due to the necessity of his military strategy, then afterwards, it was because he was a convenient element to release his desire during the military campaign. So, after he returned to Tong'an, this necessity no longer exists. Those little intimate touches which had pained him to death also would become as distant as the dream world. He would find a new object, then thoroughly forget about him.

He definitely was merely a passersby in one period of the Datong's Seventh Prince's brilliant life, basically he would have no way to leave whatever mark --- even if Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was his heaven, his world, all of the reasons for his existence, but the Cruel Prince himself wouldn't just because of this throw him an attentive eye.

After trudging for more than ten days, finally the army successfully entered the city of Tong'an.

Very fast, Duan Shun Jie realized that his worries⁵ were a little uncalled for --- as the surrendered General of a rebellion army, he had no chance at all to meet Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's family members. After seeing him in haste, Feng Zong granted him a Manor located on the outer city and conferred upon him the title of General of Pingnan. And for the Seventh Prince, Xuan Yuan, resided in the Imperial Manor in the inner city, near the Forbidden City. Both of them were separated by several thick and large walls of the Palace. Except for the few grand scale for conferring title banquets, he didn't even have the chance to see Xuan Yuan.

The days when he was unable to see Xuan Yuan were still as if he had died, but Duan Shun Jie felt he had no position at all to go and disturb his reunion with his hadn't seen for long times family members. Everyday he would be alone in his cold Manor, daydreaming. His longing to see Xuan Yuan became even thicker and stronger, he could only desperately restrain himself.

The days were unbearable, yet, in a blink of an eye, it was already the Lunar New Year's Eve. Couldn't stand the Manor's servants hoping to be together with their family expression, Duan Shun Jie since earlier had let them leave the Manor to go home. In the evening of New Year's Eve, the General's Manor was only left with a page boy with several old servants who had no home to return to.

In all places, the air was filled with a joyous atmosphere. In Tong'an City, each and every family⁶ was preparing for the spring festival meals. Duan Shun Jie completely couldn't feel whatever New Year's atmosphere. In the cold, to the point he couldn't feel the aura of a human in the room, he still could only choose to be like his usual day, sat in the study room, daydreaming, to pass the festivals.

"General..." A reverent and cautious voice, broke the coldness and stillness that surrounding the room. Looking properly, it was actually the page boy, Fu Yue, calling out to him --- Fu Yue was a boy who had a bit similarity with Chang Er, often used a very curious but with concerned eyes to secretly look at him.

"General, Seventh Prince's Imperial Concubine Ouyang comes to pay you a visit. General?"

Upon hearing the four words of Imperial Concubine Ouyang, Duan Shun Jie still couldn't recall who that was. When he came to his senses, his heart jumped severely. A hard to explain by words guilty conscience and the nervousness made him appeared to be a little off.

But what must happen eventually would happen. Even though he was unwilling to the extent of having a little fear to face Ouyang Si Qi, Duan Shun Jie still gathered up enough courage to face his only relative in this world.

"General, do you want to eat a little before you go?" Fu Yue, again, used that kind of concerned expression to look at him. Duan Shun Jie with a little guilty conscience shook his head --- when his mood was worst to the highest point, his appetite seemingly also disappeared. Although today he hadn't eaten even a grain of rice, yet his heart as if it had been stuffed full by all kinds of nameless feelings, couldn't afford to eat whatever food.

"Quick, let the Imperial Concubine to enter."

Even if he already made countless mental preparations, the sight of the big belly Ouyang Si Qi had still gave Duan Shun Jie an unbearable shock. The formerly sharp, delicate and pretty young girl had completely disappeared. The Ouyang Si Qi who appeared in front of him now was of silks and satins, left to right were personal maidens to support her by the arms, however, her face was stiff and rigid with resentment, even her naturally beautiful and charming facial features⁷ had been twisted and made her appear to be older.

"If not because Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng forced me to come, I wouldn't have come to see you." Sitting down and waved her attendants to retreat, Ouyang Si Qi's first sentence was harsh and indifferent.

Had known that she wouldn't be friendly with him, yet, Ouyang Si Qi's full of resentment words still caused a painful pang in Duan Shun Jie's heart.

"Long time no see⁸ ... He... Xuan Yuan, does he treat you well?" Didn't know what kind of face he should make to ask about her and Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's relationship, Duan Shun Jie could feel that the news he was asking seemed like a tremendous irony.

"What do you think?" Ouyang Si Qi's face became even more strict, "After entering the Imperial Manor, the times I met him, in total were not more than five times. In order of seniority, I am his seventeenth Concubine. Not including all of these, he is the enemy who had killed my father. Say, will he treat me well or not?"

Except for silence, Duan Shun Jie absolutely didn't know how to deal with his sister's suffering. Even his own wound was unable to be covered, how could he have the surplus energy to comfort someone else.

"Si Qi, I beg you, please don't blame me..." Silent for a long while, Duan Shun Jie in the end could only earnestly beg for her forgiveness. He had harmed his closest person, yet, he still couldn't barter⁹ it with his own happiness --- Duan Shun Jie felt that he most probably was this world's greatest fool.

Facing Duan Shun Jie who asked for forgiveness, Ouyang Si Qi's response was to powerfully land her palm on his face, then coldly said: "Duan Shun Jie, what kind of joke are you telling! Actually still have the face to ask me not to blame you! You ganged up with the outsider to kill my father and destroy my Pingnan estate, also instigated a spy to deceive me... My life has ended, all has been destroyed by your hypocritical hand!! Dearest Brother, even so, you still dare to ask me not to blame you! Ahahahaha..." The laughter voice was sharp, as if it was a sharp knife stabbing on Duan Shun Jie's heart.

Ouyang Si Qi finally stopped her laughter --- Duan Shun Jie thought she would cry, but that previously like to cry and laugh young girl indeed had completely vanished, her eyes didn't have even a drop of tears, instead, there was this sent cold shivers down to one's spine absolutely horrified kind of hatred and despise.

"Si Qi, don't be like this..."

His face was burning hot with pain, but how could it be compared to the anguish in Duan Shun Jie's heart. He thought that by letting her become Xuan Yuan's wife he could make her a bit happier, but looking at the situation now, it was as if he had shoved her into an even more tragic situation, "The departed had departed..."

"Duan Shun Jie, you shut up! You had betrayed your relatives to gain high-position and great wealth, how could you still have the face to talk about the departed! Duan Shun Jie, you are such a shameless lowly person! I curse you to not be able to die peacefully!" Coldly threw down an ill poisonous curse, Ouyang Si Qi called out to her maidens with a loud voice to help her leave, not even turned her head to look at the sitting alone like losing soul dropping spirit Duan Shun Jie.

Not realizing how long it had been, the transmitted ear-splitting noise of firecrackers from a distant place pulled Duan Shun Jie out from his absentminded state. Looking around to the four sides, the pitch black night at all around was cold, miserable, freezing and cheerless, to the point he even didn't know where Fu Yue had gone to.

With a slow step he left the study towards the nextdoor's bedroom, Duan Shun Jie's steps seemed to be abnormally heavy. On former years during the New Year's Eve, he would be together with the Lord of Zhongnan to pass the eve, even if he didn't have father and mother to be by his side, however, the doting of his Master and the brothers' brotherly love was satisfying enough to make him forget his unhappiness as an orphan.

Never had it crossed his mind that when he had become a complete adult, this moment and this day, he would deeply understand what the meaning of being miserably lonely was.

"Xi Cheng, I miss you so much..." Alone by himself he entered the bedroom which had the same miserably lonely atmosphere, Duan Shun Jie walked to the table and lit up a candle. The filled with yearning's heart finally at the moment when it was lit by the candle light, burst open and poured out like silvery water, turned into an improper whisper, scattered in the icy-cold air.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 11

Notes

1. Greedy for life afraid of death (id): be mortally afraid of death.
2. The heart here refers to Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's heart.
3. This part is very tricky. I have discussed it with turtle about the appropriate translation for this line, yet, we can't come up with the most appropriate one. In the end, I decided to go with 'a paragraph of explanation for one sentence' –according to turtle. Ahahahaha... XD. So, it is like this: 自己卻已經賭下了人生的全部. This 賭 literally means to bet, to gamble. 'Gambling on everything he has' can mean he is ready for the worst outcome. But this line also could be translated as, He already put down all of his worth as human being. So, I leave it to your imagination for which one is the better translation while me, as usual, went with the literal translation. Wuahahahahaha... XD
4. Xishuo – this word has no meaning, only a sfx sound of rustling clothes.
5. The worrying here refers to his worrying over meeting with Ouyang Si Qi and Xi Cheng's Concubines.
6. Each and every family (id): Every household.
7. Facial features: the five sense organs (ears, eyes, lips, nose and tongue).
8. Long time no see 好久不見了, I translated it literally, while the proper translation should be : It has been a while. XD
9. What Shun Jie meant by barter is, he had sacrificed the people around him in order to be with Xi Cheng, yet he himself couldn't get what he wanted the most. --- His happiness obviously is Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. So, he had made such efforts in vain.

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 12



luxiufer.livejournal.com/38774.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 12



Never would have thought, this kind of wild wishes actually could come true.

“Duan Shun Jie, are you calling me?”

One of his heartfelt feelings escaped his mouth, from the window sill unexpectedly transmitted the reply. Duan Shun Jie in a shock turned his body in a flash --- there he saw the wearing a majestic ceremonial formal attire Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng sitting on the window sill, looking at him with his like smiling but not smiling face.

Whatever kind of words wouldn't be able to describe Duan Shun Jie's intense surging emotions at this moment. Before his rationality could react, his body already out of control charged forward and embraced him.

“Xi Cheng!” This moment Duan Shun Jie, compared to whenever moment, could consciously feel that even if he had Ouyang Si Qi as his sister, his heart since the beginning had regarded Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng as his only relative in this world. He appeared at the moment when he felt so helpless and lonely, as long as he had this moment to be together with him, all of his distress and suffering could be forgotten, to the point if he died at this moment, he also absolutely wouldn't have the slightest complaint.

Compared with Duan Shun Jie's agitated action, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng seemed to be more relaxed. Patting Duan Shun Jie's back, his voice contained a teasing tone: “What, just by seeing me you have become this happy? Haven't I told you, if I have the mood, I will come to see you.”

Truthfully, Xuan Yuan himself also couldn't explain why did he, after attending his Imperial Father's banquet ignoring his Concubines' urge to stay, rushed to this cold and cheerless Manor. However, from his bearing it couldn't be detected even the slightest bit of confusion, he appeared to be natural and unaffected to the point of invulnerable.

Maybe just regarded this as a little measure to buy his support, furthermore, the taste of Duan Shun Jie's body was indeed not bad --- he straightened out his little unusual behaviour.

His eyes wickedly gazed on Duan Shun Jie's slightly undulated buttock's line under the robe. He used a lecher's frivolous manner to grope it harshly. Staring fixedly at him and said: “So you really do miss me! Tonight, you need to exert all of your energy for serving your husband...”

Beyond expectation, Duan Shun Jie's face in an instant flushed red, yet, unlike what usually happened in the past, he would avert his eyes, instead, he courageously looked straight at him.

“Xi Cheng, I miss you so much!” The sparkling translucent drop of water drifted out from his incomparable sincere pair of eyes, Duan Shun Jie himself didn't understand what was wrong with him --- maybe the reason was the loneliness in this New Year's Eve, or maybe because he was hurt badly by Ouyang Si Qi's words, he was already helpless to load the fully filled madly with love heart for Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. Even if he clearly understood that he would be hurt, he still wanted to offer all of himself.

Even a calm and steady person like Xuan Yuan got a slight sharp throb in his heart by his expression. He straightened his face, resumed his former unaffected expression, taking Duan Shun Jie to the bed, also attempted to dilute the solemn and tranquil atmosphere with a joking fashion.

Duan Shun Jie gave the impression of being extremely meek, to the extent it wasn't like in the past, insisted on

blowing out the candle. Under the fluttering light, he anxiously wanted to pull open his clothes, but was stopped by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng.

"Let me." Without minding the already half taken off by Duan Shun Jie long robe, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's hand went straight to the subject, pulling off his trousers and underwear altogether, cast them to the bedside, "Tonight, you are not allowed to close your eyes. I want you to look properly when I enter..."

The penetrating dark eyes pressed on Duan Shun Jie so that he couldn't escape, could only choose to wordlessly nod his head, allowing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to help him to sit, leaning on the wall beside the bed, also putting several cushions under the back of his waist --- this kind of sitting angle enabled him to clearly see his own naked lower body, while on the other hand, Xuan Yuan was still wearing his complete robe. The entire circumstance, as far as one could see was obscene to the utmost.

"Open your legs wider." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's voice was calm to the extent of causing one's hair to stand up in anger¹. Duan Shun Jie resisted his sense of shame and did as he requested, looking at him shifting his body closer to cram himself into the space between his legs.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng put forth his strength to push Duan Shun Jie's thighs to both side until he could clearly see the uncovered anus. That slightly dark colored crease, because being stimulated by the air and Xuan Yuan's horny gaze, contracted for a bit. This sight made Duan Shun Jie had a spell of dizziness.

He subconsciously swallowed a mouthful of his saliva, he couldn't help but want to close his pair of thighs, but the delicate muscle of his inner thigh was hit hard by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng.

"Use your hand to hold your thigh, I told you to properly look, didn't I!"

Signaling him to use his own hands to hold in place his widely opened thighs, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, while unceasingly using his line of sight to caress Duan Shun Jie's most secret and most embarrassing part --- no matter if it was his genitalia's hairs or his already slightly excited erected manhood or that continuously shivering sweet hole, none of them escaped his eyes, his right hand was taking out the scented oil from the jar and moving with an indecent to the extreme, stirring and rubbing. Until he saw Duan Shun Jie's manhood, because it couldn't stand the stimulation of the sleek and wet sound, become completely in high spirits, by then he withdrew his covered in scented oil hand, and forcefully thrust in two of his fingers to enter that small and narrow cavity.

"Ngnn..." The excessively intense stimulation and pain made Duan Shun Jie unable to restrain his groaning voice, wanted to avert his line of vision but was stopped by Xuan Yuan's warning, so he could only rigidly look at his fingers unceasingly moving deeper into his inner body.

Could feel that the narrow passage under the stimulation of his fingers had gradually loosened and opened up, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng in a quick pace added in another finger.

"Xi Cheng..." Duan Shun Jie called out with his trembling voice. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng also already unable to suppress the starting to burn up desire within his body, swiftly took off his sash, taking out his already stiff and hard like an iron desire.

It was hard to describe by words the feeling of Duan Shun Jie when he helplessly looked on a man using his manhood to enter his body, that kind clear awareness of one's self-esteem being trampled on thoroughly mixed with the sweetness of having the sense of belonging, caused him to be unable to restrain the spell by spell shivering.

Being held by a man who exerting his strength swaying his waist in a thrust in and out movement, Duan Shun Jie felt that his soul nearly left this wallowing in the ocean of lust body. The hands which were supporting his own knees had become completely stiff. All of his consciousness as if only remained on that being tormented and ravaged by a man's lethal weapon part.

He could only breathe out when Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng pulled back, breathe in when he thrust in. The only feeling and moving he could make was continuously moaning in grief and shivering... until that man released his burning hot liquid inside his body.

After the climax, Duan Shun Jie could feel that the Seventh Prince's manhood still inside his body slowly became soft, yet, he seemingly didn't have the intention to pull out. His both hands still held onto his waist. A pair of being prompted by the lust became darker in color black pupils stared fixedly on his face...But he already had no strength to evade his scorching hot line of vision. Even if he knew, compared to whatever time, his position now was very awkward, he already didn't have any left over strength to evade even half of it.

Didn't know how long had passed, until their panting and gasping slowly calmed down, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng finally slowly pulled his manhood out from Duan Shun Jie's body. Following the pulling out movement, thick and white bodily fluid from the unable to close butthole spilled out. Duan Shun Jie embarrassedly tried to close his thighs, but because Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng hugged his bosom tightly, he couldn't move or stir.

He could feel Xuan Yuan's long and slender fingers from his back slide into that filled with sticky bodily liquid sacred cavity. On that sticky and thin membrane moving ambiguously, making the little evidence of the joyous moment slowly flow out from his body, little by little, moistened the bed sheet...

Duan Shun Jie because of this more intimate than sexual intercourse moment, nearly stopped his breathing. Could only allow Xuan Yuan's hand to unceasingly caress and stir up his inner body. Even when the love liquid almost completely had been cleared away, he still didn't have the intention to stop that kind of intimate play --- instead, along with the intestines he continuously expanded and loosened, successively increased his fingers one by one, to the point the entire of his right hand had completely entered Duan Shun Jie's inner body he still didn't stop to push forward little by little.

"Xuan Yuan... you..." Duan Shun Jie was frightened by his intention and nearly stop his breathing, "Do not! No! You are insane!" Knowing that at this time if struggling would only hurt himself, he could only attempt to use words and eyes to convey his rejection toward Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, and didn't dare to carelessly writhe.

"Don't be afraid! Shun Jie, you are mine..." In his heart, he was perfectly aware that his actions had broken off from the conventional practice, but that wrapping up of his right hand warmth unceasingly triggered his desire to explore forward. While he was forcefully kissing Duan Shun Jie's lips intending to lessen his fear, his other hand was groping on his outer robe to find the scented oil and poured it inside Duan Shun Jie's tunnel while his right hand was still staying in that part. Soon after that, taking advantage of the scented oil sleekness, he exerted his strength to push forward a little bit more...

"Ahh..." Duan Shun Jie gave a blood-curdling screech. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng hurriedly sealed his lips with his own lips. His left hand firmly looped around his waist to clamp him down, not letting him to struggle. His right hand was not showing mercy at all, pressing an inch further.

Both of Duan Shun Jie's thighs trembled and quivered, he couldn't use words to describe the feeling of his inner part being penetrated this deep by another person. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's fingers felt like they almost surpassed his navel's point, the sphincter because of being exceedingly spread had become painful to the point of numb. The fingers that were shoved to an unimaginable place were making a slight scratching movement, giving him the spell by spell hard to be analogized kind of pain along with pleasure.

Most probably could sense that Duan Shun Jie had stopped his struggling, Xuan Yuan stopped his movement --- As if time had stopped, the two maintained their strange posture for another while. Xuan Yuan finally tried to gently move back his hand...

"Don't ..."Xuan Yuan's action gave Duan Shun Jie an unexplainable pain and embarrassment. Xuan Yuan as if he had recovered from the peculiar state of first time attempting on this improper play, his face seemed like that of

smiling but not smiling again, began to use the unsettling width lightly rotate his arm inside Duan Shun Jie's twitching inner part.

Duan Shun Jie was scared to the point didn't even dare to shout, could only stiffly recline, desperately wanted to endure this inhuman torment...The air only had the skin and flesh mixed together with scented oil rubbing faintly sound...

Didn't know how long had it been, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng finally took out his right hand in an abrupt. On the utmost brief moment, to the point Duan Shun Jie didn't even have the time to scream, he had withdrawn his body.

"So painful..." Duan Shun Jie's eyes corner floated with tears, still maintained the both thighs widely open posture while reclining, as if whatever small movement could evoke the rip the heart and split the lungs kind of pain. He didn't dare to take a look at his current circumstances, but when the corner of his eyes caught a glimpse of Xuan Yuan using a thin silk to wipe his right hand, he was so ashamed that he wanted to bump his head on the wall.

"Do you know, your inside is very hot...Sucking me in like it didn't want to let go..." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's smile contained an unspeakable abnormality. His fingers as if playing, gently pressing on Duan Shun Jie's completely opened up, red and swollen fascinating muscle. Taken by surprise by this feather-like caressing made him shudder from head to toe.

"It is enough for tonight. Don't forget, tomorrow there is still the Imperial Father's grand banquet." Bending his body to softly print a kiss on Duan Shun Jie's lips, his pose was relaxed while tidying up his clothing then elegantly left from the window.

Duan Shun Jie remained unable to come around from his chaotic state. He only reclined stiffly on the messy bed, spending the most unbearable New Year's Eve in his life.

According to Datong's Palace convention, the first night of the New Year, the Emperor would routinely hold a banquet for His numerous Officials. The grand scale of the banquet would be held in the Imperial Palace's main hall. On the banquet, hundreds of seats would be placed. The Emperor, Empress, with the Princes and their Imperial Concubines would attend together to receive and entertain the Officials. It could be said as Datong's Imperial greatest scale banquet.

Regarding the newly conferred General of Pingnan Duan Shun Jie, Emperor Feng Zong of course wouldn't let go this wonderful opportunity to show off Datong's magnanimousness. He intentionally arranged his seat in a practically unsuitable with his position place inside the hall, to a place where he could see in close range all of Datong's highest figures.

Experiencing last nights unimaginable torment, Duan Shun Jie nearly couldn't even walk. He gave up the idea of riding a horse and changed into riding a carriage to reach the main hall. Almost exhausted all of his strength only to smoothly sit upright on his seat.

"General Duan, the colour of your face is not that good, is it?" The closest seat to him, Datong's renown General, Pei Jin Tian, together following the Seventh Prince went on expedition to all places, he was a hard to come by acquaintance of Duan Shun Jie among the numerous of Officials. Looking that he was making an infinitely suffering face, he couldn't restrain himself from asking.

"Maybe because yesterday I ate something that upset my stomach, not so comfortable." Duan Shun Jie naturally wouldn't say the fact, could only answer coolly.

Pei Jin Tian seemed to still have something to say, the guards in the hall already made a loud voice to announce the arrival of the Imperial Family. Pei Jin Tian busily stopped his tongue and together with the all Officials stood up, Duan Shun Jie also forced himself to support his standing up body.

Maybe it had something to do with the New Year and coming one after another victory, Emperor Feng Zong seemed to be especially lively. By the both of his sides, seated in seniority order were each and every Prince with their Imperial Concubines, all also in bright and new clothing, glowing with health and radiating vigour.

Although they were splendidly in bouquets of flowers and piles of silks² to the extreme, upon Duan Shun Jie's eyes, the sitting by the left side three seat apart from the Emperor Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was still the outstanding eye-catching one. The today him changed his clothing to a bright yellow ceremonial robes, setting off his white as snow face, red as flower lips even more.

Unable to tear away his line of vision from that man, even if he couldn't avoid the spot sitting by his side the beautiful Seventh Prince's Concubine, he still forced himself to endure the pain in his heart in order to engrave his face in his heart.

Maybe he could sense Duan Shun Jie's gaze, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng shifted his eyes to look at him. The moment their eyes met, he suddenly smiled in a wicked way, stretching out his right hand, two of his middle fingers made a spin gesture, instantly caused Duan Shun Jie shame that he lowered his head, didn't dare to impudently gaze at him again.

The wine had gone for three rounds. Emperor Feng Zong stood up from his seat, extending his hand to signal that he had something to say. The originally noisy and excited grand hall became quiet at once. All of the Officials knew that if Feng Zong was as solemn as this, he must have important news to announce.

"All beloved Ministers, Datong's fortune for this year was definitely incomparable to the ordinary triumph. Today is also the happiest day of my life. Pingnan Ouyang Fa De, Southwest Jiang Rong, Northern Huang Zong Kai... for many years threatened our Datong rebels and traitors, one by one have been crushed by Datong's army during this year..." Spoke until this part, he paused his tongue, all Ministers and Officials in unison shouted out "Long Live", the loud voice echoed in the grand hall, imposing to the extreme.

"Datong's prosperity, must be grateful for our ancestors' blessing and protection, also must rely on my Seventh Prince's braveness, skill and fierceness in battle. Xi Cheng!" Feng Zong looked at his left side, seeing that Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng stood up to reply, then walked to the middle of the hall to kneel.

"Seventh Prince Xi Cheng, for the outstanding military service, the merit of protecting the nation, today I confer you as a Regent Prince, take the leadership of the whole military power. From today on, may you join the court to discuss the affairs of the state with me."

Feng Zong's obvious favor on him did not at all make Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng change his expression. His bearing was as calm and collected as before. He only calmly bowed to express his gratitude: "Thank you Imperial Father."

Once the decree was issued, the whole hall was in an uproar in an instant. To consider the order of seniority, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was the seventh ranked, actually not a powerful Prince. Feng Zong let him take the leadership of the whole military force, could imply him to be above the Crown Prince of Eastern Palace in terms of power and influence. Inevitably, because of this, the face color of the Crown Prince changed.

Gazing at the long robe caressed by the night wind, had the power to overturn the world Xuan Yuan, Duan Shun Jie's heart mixed with all kind of feelings --- Xuan Yuan could be in control of a bigger power, his first reaction was happiness for him, however, looking at him stepping even higher, the distance between them also became larger and further. The closer he was to the summit, his value for him would also be less.

Originally ,he thought that his desperate feeling on the New Year's Eve had faintly turned to a better point after that unexpected visitation, but today, the distance between the two as if once again had been pulled apart. At this turning point towards the summit, their entanglement would have what kind of ending?

End of Chapter 12

Notes:

1. To make one's hair stand up in anger (id) : to raise people's hackles.
 2. In bouquets of flowers and piles of silks : in heavy make up and nicely dressed.
- Current Mood: 😞 sad
 - Current Music: Alone in this world

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 13



luxiufer.livejournal.com/39041.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 13



Originally they thought that this time when they went back to Capital to spend the New Year it would be a long and peaceful holiday, but even before they reached the fifteenth of the month, Chuan Shan's Province Military Governor, He Chuan Lin, unexpectedly led the troops to revolt. The Northwest army had repeatedly reported an emergency. The newly received title from the Emperor, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng would naturally be unable to watch with folded arms¹, requested Feng Zong, to assign him to gather the military force, leaving the Capital, once again, striding on the road to another expedition.

All the soldiers had just reunited with their family not even for a longtime; of course they would openly voice their discontent. Complaining and grumbling that this He Chuan Lin couldn't pick the date. But the promoted to be the Vice General² in the army, Duan Shun Jie, most probably was the only person who was sincerely delighted by this war affair --- from the first night of the New Year on the grand banquet, since then he had yet to see Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. He knew clearly that he surely indulged himself in the land of pleasure with his beloved beautiful concubine wives, so this all of a sudden coming war was as if Heaven had bestowed a golden opportunity upon him, allowed him to obtain another chance to be close with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng again.

Although everyone complained, they didn't dare to delay the fulfilment of the military plan. The army in a short time had built up the forces. However, after several Li out from Tong'an, the weather changed to extremely odious, rain accompanied by snow. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng even if burning with impatience also couldn't afford to force an order for the troops to march forward under this kind of weather. Could only order to pitch a camp where they were at.

After properly arranging the issue with the Generals, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng hastily found an excuse to leave the Commander's tent, strolled to Duan Shun Jie's tent.

The time was near to midnight. Duan Shun Jie still hadn't slept yet. Under the flickering light of the candle, he sat alone in front of a table, gazing at the empty air, lost in his thoughts.

"What? This late yet still haven't slept, are you waiting for me?" Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng of course knew that he was waiting for him, but he pretended not knowing, deliberately asked him.

Duan Shun Jie since long ago had been used to his evilness, not replying to him, only in his eyes revealing the level of his love. Meekly letting Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng led him to the bed, taking off each other's clothing, and silently becoming one while rolling on the bed.

After a period of time of kissing and caressing followed by a little too rough sexual intercourse, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng finally had vented out a little of his frustration caused by the war and bad weather. Gently caressing Duan Shun Jie's messy long hair on the pillow, Xuan Yuan's heart inevitably moved a little.

From the very start it had never crossed his mind even in the least that he and this man's connection could continue for this long. Although he had held more than a few men, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng only regarded them as a means to break the monotony of embracing numerous women, thus toward men, mostly only intimate for one time then was over with it.

The taste of embracing men even though not so bad, he in the end preferred the delicate and sweet scent of women's bodies more than men's --- He had always felt this way.

Undeniably, Duan Shun Jie's infatuation and obedience made him have a sort of intense conquering and new fresh feeling, but he had never felt whatever special feeling towards Duan Shun Jie. Compared to an unable to join the army concubine, this was a General who he could use for his personal needs during a war, also a tool to vent his desire that wouldn't bring any of the inconveniences --- this ought to be his place in his heart.

However, under that nameless impulse on the night of New Year's Eve, he indeed had applied a hadn't used before style to embrace this man. Inevitably, this had caused Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to waver a little. Entering other people that deep was something he had never imagined, that night, without the least bit of care he had done that to Duan Shun Jie... His heart clearly understood that he shouldn't do that kind of thing to other people, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng could only explain that this was because of Duan Shun Jie's infatuation which had provoked him.

Looking at that belonged to a man with ordinary appearance and body, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng laughed coldly at his own train of thought --- how could he suspect that he would contain an unusual feeling for this ordinary man. This was absolutely impossible.

The whole night, to confirm to himself that toward Duan Shun Jie he didn't have whatever special feeling, the Cruel Prince as if using the fiercest of his strength to torment him. Duan Shun Jie from the start was gritting his teeth to endure his crudeness, until he really couldn't bear it anymore, by then he completely gave up his consciousness. Just having intercourse like that for several times, for several days he was seemingly unable to get up from bed, could only ride in the carriage to follow the marching troops.

Despite all the difficulty, the troops finally arrived at Shudu City. Shudu was the nearest prefecture to Qing'an City where the He Family's troops were stationed. The Senior Provincial Official of course since earlier had received the news about the arrival of The Seventh Prince, prepared the Mansion to be the temporary residence of the Commander in Chief, allow Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng and all those high-ranking Military Officers to settle down.

In the evening, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng really aroused other's suspicion by wearing clothing for a night walk, he came to see Duan Shun Jie.

"Xi Cheng, you are considering to..." Staring at the whole body in black Xuan Yuan, Duan Shun Jie showed a puzzled and confused face.

"I want you to go together with me to He Chuan Lin's Manor to make an inquiry for a while." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng said such shocking words, but his manner of speaking were as relaxed as saying about going to take a stroll only.

Duan Shun Jie was blank upon hearing it. After a long while he finally regained his senses back, busily said: "Xi Cheng, this is not proper. Personally infiltrating the enemy camp is too risky, an unwise decision for a battle plan!"

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng twitched his eyebrows at once upon hearing his speech: "If you don't agree to go together, I can go by myself, why the need to talk about whatever battle plan. If you really want to talk about whatever basic tactics, don't you forget that the Pingnan's war..." Saying half of the sentence, he saw that Duan Shun Jie's face suddenly turned deathly pale, in the end he stopped his tongue, not saying anything further.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's heartless words stabbed until his heart felt a severe pain, Duan Shun Jie had his heart filled with discontented feelings.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng ah Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, if not because you over and over again took advantage of my feelings for you, Pingnan absolutely would not be so easily breached. The matter is like that, you still want to take this matter as your achievement to be bragged in front of me. How cruel can you be!

Knowing that if today he didn't accompany Xuan Yuan, he certainly would still go through the danger by himself, Duan Shun Jie couldn't abandon his safety after all, could only secretly grit his teeth: "Alright, I will accompany you this time."

"As it should be. Since you know it would be like this why do you have to be so wordy." Knowing Duan Shun Jie in the end would still be unable to reject him, Xuan Yuan's heart surely filled with a proud of himself feeling. Waving his hand to signal him to follow as he took the lead.

Tonight was of a night when the moon was black and the wind was high.

Two people one leading one following went out of Shudu City. The outskirts of a town during winter as far as eyes could see was an overgrown wild land, in all four directions entirely not a single human's shadow could be seen. The two people made use of the complete darkness, exhibited their air-kungfu's skill to the utmost point, speeding towards Qing'an City.

No matter Duan Shun Jie or Xuan Yuan, both could be called as the present high-skilled master. Only needed two hours of time, the stand tall and towering city wall of Qing'an already could be seen. Seeing Xuan Yuan stopped and lowered his body to hide under the thick growth of grass around the river side that shielded the city, Duan Shun Jie also busily followed him and hid beside him.

Taking advantage of the split second when the soldiers on the City wall shifted their line of sight, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng suddenly pulled Duan Shun Jie's wrist, the two flew up high, after several skilled leaps into the air, they had passed the river which protected the wall then stuck closely to the foot of the wall.

The soldiers who heard the light sound of movement quickly turned their head to their direction, but the in the pitch black night undoubtedly they were unable to see the two who were standing at their point blank position. Searching for a while, they didn't pay more attention to it anymore.

Duan Shun Jie followed Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng quietly making a round to the side of the city wall. Seeing Xuan Yuan was so proficient in standing closely to the wall and moving upwards, he couldn't have but whisper inwardly, this Seventh Prince is actually such an expert in steal chickens and dogs-pilfer³ technique. Even so, he didn't dare to neglect following him to move upwards.

When close to the tower of the city, Xuan Yuan flipped over his body and landed lightly on the ground like a cat. The guards completely couldn't detect the movement on their back, instead, they stared fixedly towards the city's gate. Duan Shun Jie secretly breathed out a relieved sigh then hurriedly followed on Xuan Yuan's back to leave immediately.

On the way, they captured a soldier of the He Family to clarify the residence of He Chuan Lin. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng took the lead leaping into the air to fly towards He's Manor. Though Duan Shun Jie had been feeling a little unsettled, he could only exert his power to follow him.

The Manor of He originally was the Qing'an provincial office, even though it couldn't be compared to Tong'an's Imperial Capital's loftiness, but indeed it was comparably large. The two reduced as much as possible their shadow while leaning on the wall of the yard. Xuan Yuan quietly measured the topographical features of all directions then chose the still brightly lit house in the middle.

Duan Shun Jie felt that he was too arrogant and careless, the anxiety in his heart absolutely couldn't be dissipated. However, if you can't do anything to prevent it, you might as well sit back and enjoy it. The matter had come to this point, he could only exert his power to protect Xuan Yuan to attain his goal.

Cautiously squatted by Xuan Yuan's side, from the roof tile that he lifted open to gaze down to see --- this place should be He Chuan Lin's study room, even if already deep at night, the people in the room were not few.

On the seat of honor was a man with somewhat imposing clothing, from his face, he was about forty years old, should be the He Chuan Lin himself. In the guests' seat were roughly about seven, eight people, except for the one wearing a General outfit, should be the Commanding General of the He Family, the others were wearing black

outfits, the robe was embroidered with golden colored pattern, looks like they belonged to the same sect.

Duan Shun Jie, upon the sight, his heart shivered with cold. Seeing that the outfit was actually of the currently had an enormous power and influence in Jianghu, Ping Tian Sect. This Ping Tian Sect, according to the legend, was a teaching from the Western Region. They had established their teaching in Datong for many years, even if they possessed an absolute dominance in Jianghu, but usually they didn't get involved in government and political affairs at all. Never had he thought that He Chuan Lin raising this army this time was actually related to Ping Tian Sect.

Turned to look at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng by his side, his face was surely not the same indifferent as the beginning. Obviously he was also aware that He Chuan Lin and the previous rebels were not on the same level, today his spying was actually too careless.

In their hearts, both of them could faintly feel that something was not right, when they saw that not even one of the people in the study was talking, as if they were listening and waiting attentively for something. Even to say damn on the quiet was already too late, only heard the piercing whistle sound behind their back, a brilliant fireworks soared high into the air, in an flash the two's hideout was illuminated brightly.

Duan Shun Jie's first reaction was to pull Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's hand and rush to go out of the Manor. Before his eyes, the entire of the Manor seemingly became bustle in an instant, in the utmost briefest moment it had become brightly lit. Numerous black figures one by one gushed out from inside the rooms, going towards the direction of the two running away people to make a chase.

Duan Shun Jie cried and groaned inwardly: No wonder this Qing'an's City guard is this loose, so it is because He Chuan Lin has the backing of Jianghu's highest expert. No wonder he has such great nerve. Maybe today, entering is easy but getting out will be difficult.

Looked again at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng by his side, his expression also incomparably serious. The two didn't even have the interval to discuss, could only desperately dash toward the outer part of the city.

Normally, with the level of their skill, certainly they had escaped and left the enemies behind, but Ping Tian Sect's skilled kungfu master was not that easy to be dealt with, like a shadow following the body, they chased only on several Zhang behind. From behind them, they heard the continuously flying and bursting fireworks as the way to transmit the order. Duan Shun Jie and Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng both cried in alarm inwardly, knowing that today they really dealt with a great mistake.

"Xi Cheng. You go first! I will help you to keep them off for a while!" Seeing the situation at present, perhaps they wouldn't make it out successfully, but with Xuan Yuan's status, being captured was absolutely out of question. Therefore, even if with his skills, faced with this many of Ping Tian Sect members, the odds of success would be none at all, Duan Shun Jie still would exhaust his power to fight for a little time to let his lover out from the perilous situation.

"Don't talk. Run faster. Careful not to drain your Qi!" Xuan Yuan's majestic bearing manifested itself at this critical moment. The previously panic-stricken state had completely vanished. He seemingly didn't have the intention to abandon Duan Shun Jie, only wholeheartedly dashed forward.

Seeing him like this, even though Duan Shun Jie was worried, yet a burst of unusual sweetness flew into his heart, arousing the infinite desire to be alive in his heart, desperately used his air-kungfu to its highest extent.

The Qing'an's wall was already within sight, the tower of the city was already brightly lit by lanterns, standing there were the hands fully equipped with weapons and bended bows of the He's Family army, made the two's hearts trembled with fear.

On their backs were the extremely vicious large numbers of Ping Tian Sects high-skilled members. If they caught

up, it would be a harder fight. They both could only force their self to dash forward to the side of the tower with the least soldiers. Holding their weapons tightly, determined to breakout with all they had got in the battle to fight to the death.

Seeing that the two figures had entered their firing range, He Family army raised a verbal command, a dense rain of arrows instantaneously being fired towards the two. Both of them quickly applied their Qi circling on their outward body to become a shield to obstruct the flying sharp objects. But this kind of applying Qi's method indeed had caused their speed to be slowed down a great deal, and the pursuers behind them had reduced their gap.

Seeing the two spies charged towards them, the city's guards one after another tried to block them, but being eliminated by the two's induced with Qi's weapons at once --- it kept going like that. Although they had soared up high in the air, rushing to the side of the served as the city's protection lakeside, the Ping Tian Sect skilled members already caught up to them. One after another they took out their weaponries and charged at the two. Looks like a bloody battle was hard to be avoided.

Things had come to this point, Duan Shun Jie was unable to deal with them any longer. Focusing all of his Qi on both of his palms, he exerted all of his power to hit the thin air at Xuan Yuan's feet position. The originally already soaring high into the air Xuan Yuan, gained an external force aid, in an instant as if growing a pair of wings flew cross the city wall. However, Duan Shun Jie who dispelled the Qi that protecting his body, in that moment was being shot by numerous sharp arrows. By the momentum brought by the endless sharp arrows, his whole person flipped over to cross the wall straight in the middle of the lake and sank.

Almost at the same time, the Ping Tian Sect skilled masters arrived at the city wall, they still had the time to see the moment when Duan Shun Jie fell in the middle of the lake. But Xuan Yuan seemed like he had evaporated into thin air, disappeared without a trace --- the lake was somewhat deep, waiting for quite a while, all of them still couldn't see the already wounded heavily Duan Shun Jie emerge from the lake.

"Quick bring the torch and search in all directions!" The Ping Tian Sect skilled masters' leader in an utter flustered state shouted out. Never thought that he actually could let the Datong's spies escape in front of his own eyes, if things kept going like this, Ping Tian Sect's strength would be looked down by the He Family's army. Losing face was a small matter, but if because of this caused He Chuan Lin to reduce the formerly agreed on share for Ping Tian Sect, it wouldn't be worth it.

A mass of people were noisily searching for the whole night, but even a piece of clothes from the two they couldn't find. Causing He Chuan Lin to fly into a rage upon receiving the report from Ping Tian Sect, he nearly screamed out loud --- He Chuan Lin knew that Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng had always tried to spy on the battalion before war. Relying on the martial arts' experts under his command, he arranged this trap. Never had he thought that even a single spy he couldn't seize. Of course he would be furious to the extreme.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng made use of Duan Shun Jie's supporting force to safely cross over the protected the city's lake. Relying on his exceptionally practiced water skills, he returned to the lake and entered the lake thinking of using the lake to conceal his body. Didn't think that he would unexpectedly join with the drifting Duan Shun Jie. Hurriedly fished out a replenish life godly pill to give to Duan Shun Jie then pulled him down to the bottom of the lake to hide from the dangerous area. After several times of changing the air, Xuan Yuan finally dared to stealthily move out to the shore at a far away from the city's gate place.

Recalling the process of escaping alive from this dangerous with a slim chance of survival event, even Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng couldn't help but have a little fear after the event. Carrying on his back the pale as death Duan Shun Jie who from beginning to end remained unconscious, looking all round at the unfamiliar terrain, Xuan Yuan decided that he couldn't take the risk from randomly moving in order to avoid running into the pursuer's soldiers, considering over and over again, he decided to find a place to hide first, after safely settling down, the next could be thought of later.

This place though bleak and desolate, fortunately the mountain was high the forest was dense. Carrying Duan Shun Jie on his back, going as far as possible into the depth of the mountain for some time, he finally chose a clean cave then put him down to check the condition of his wound.

He saw that the wrapped in a simple way wound had burst open and was leaking blood --- Duan Shun Jie didn't use his Qi to guard his body when he was shot, the wound was extremely deep, his right shoulder had been pierced through to a transparent hole. If not because of the valuable replenish life godly pill sustaining his life, maybe since earlier he would have died.

Looking at the faintly breathing Duan Shun Jie, Xuan Yuan was truly upset. If it was in accordance with his usual temperament, since earlier he wouldn't mind about Duan Shun Jie being dead or alive and abandoned him to go alone. However, when he recalled that at the final moment Duan Shun Jie was such not in the least bit hesitant and desperately wanted to protect him, his heart in the end became slightly soft.

Alright. Just regard this as returning your favor.

Helping Duan Shun Jie to wrap a new clothes on his wound, from his bosom, he took out a replenish life goldy pill and fed it to him. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng tore open Duan Shun Jie's robes and pressing both his palms on his body, used his Qi to have the drug to take effect.

Having the replenish life godly pill which had the reputation of reviving the dead back to life, also having Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's Qi to assist it, when Xuan Yuan fully satisfied with the success, Duan Shun Jie's face finally had a thread of blood color. Looking at him curled up and shivered with cold in his sleeping state, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng couldn't help but have his line of sight fall on the spots of kiss marks on his body --- they were several nights ago left behind by him, he couldn't help but let out a sigh, taking off his outer robe to cover his body.

As a result, when Duan Shun Jie woke up from his long comatose state, what he saw was this scene --- the always attached utmost importance in clothing Datong's Seventh Prince only donned in nearly dirty middle layer robe squatted at the side of a bonfire, turning the food that he hunted. The messy appearance was as if he hadn't properly washed himself for several days.

In the quiet and dark color of the night, the light of the fire reflected on Xuan Yuan's concentrating face. The battered clothing was unable to conceal his noble disposition --- Duan Shun Jie could only gaze blankly at his graceful movement, his heart gave a spell by spell throb.

His affection had rooted deeply from the beginning. Even if he clearly understood that his feeling towards himself still could not be up to one-tenth of the greatest point he spent for him, even if he clearly understood that if he kept going with this feeling, he would be mashed to the deepest pitfall with no way to return, yet, he still would be willing to exchange all of his future to be able to be with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to spend a little more time together, even if it was a moment or a second.

Even though he had decided on this, Duan Shun Jie still had no way to prevent his heart from feeling miserable. The corner of his eyes was hot and painful, he could only firmly bite on his lips, didn't wish to let Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng see him in his fragile state.

Maybe could sense his breath, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng turned his body, illuminated by the fire, his eyes unexpectedly had an unreal kind of delight.

"You have awakened?" Hearing Xuan Yuan speaking, that imaginary delight was seemingly only Duan Shun Jie's illusion. Xuan Yuan tone of speaking was still as harsh as before, as if condemning him, "Unexpectedly, once asleep you slept for three days. Didn't know how many military plans had you delayed."

To say the truth, Duan Shun Jie was still unclear of the situation. Seeing Xuan Yuan walked to support him up, he

busily wanted to sit, then realized that his right hand almost completely disobeying his command.

“My hand...”

Seeing his confused expression, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng only lightly curled his mouth: “The wound is severe, perhaps you need to recuperate for a period of time to be healed.”

The right hand to hold a sword was the life of a martial artist. Duan Shun Jie was afraid if he still nagged about his hand’s wound would cause Xuan Yuan to be annoyed, busily changed the subject of conversation: “Then, where are my clothes?”

“Your clothes were covered in blood, had to cast it away.” Sitting cross-legged by his side, Xuan Yuan as if also didn’t care he changed the subject, only cared to fiddle with the hare in his hand.

“Eat a little.” Seeing Duan Shun Jie opened his mouth wanting to ask something, Xuan Yuan ripped a lump of the hare and stuffed it to his mouth, succeeded in stopping him from continuing his longwinded nature.

Watching Duan Shun Jie chewing his food, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng told him about their current situation in a simple way: “After several days, Pei Jin Tian would dispatch people to come to our rescue. At that time, your wound ought to be a little better. We go back to Sudu together.”

Although a little curious and wanted to ask in this kind of condition, how could Xuan Yuan still get in touch with Pei Jin Tian, but on the second thought, this should be one of the secrets in the Datong’s army, Duan Shun Jie didn’t feel it was right to ask further.

After finishing their food, both of them fell silent for a little while. Xuan Yuan put out the bonfire and went to recline by his side. At first, the two still maintained a fair distance to each other, then little by little because of the freezing cold temperature, they leaned closer and closer. Xuan Yuan stretched out his hand from the back of his body and held Duan Shun Jie by the waist from behind, then pulled up the wide front robe to cover both of them.

Every wound on his body still hurt and throbbed without stopping, the strong arm around his waist and the lingering breath made Duan Shun Jie’s heart become warm. Closing his eyes, he allowed Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng’s nimble fingers to untie the knot of his trousers, pulling down his long pants to under his hips.

Xuan Yuan’s hard breathing obviously couldn’t conceal his desire. Duan Shun Jie of course understood that he was a man with great lust, holding out for these three days, perhaps was extremely unbearable. Therefore, at the risk of having all of his wounds become even deeper, he was still willing to serve as his partner for releasing his desire.

Lifting up Duan Shun Jie’s thigh to the side, the next second, it was not at all that kind of tearing apart pain like he had imagined --- Xuan Yuan only put his hard and solid as an iron desire to the base of his thigh, on the narrow space between his thighs, he made a slide in and out movement.

Taken by surprise for a while, Duan Shun Jie felt that this kind of lovemaking position, compared to being stabbed by a real knife or spear was even more embarrassing. But Xuan Yuan’s manhood had been unceasingly rubbing on the back of his sack, led his body to be as if burning all over, unable to stop his gasp. Stretching out his left hand to touch his own manhood...

But he was slapped away by Xuan Yuan’s hand. While exerting all of his strength to sway his body, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng’s started to rub Duan Shun Jie’s manhood along his palm with a forward and backward motion. Freezing cold air of night in the mountain, the two as if didn’t even need the cover of the thin cotton clothes, hot to the point of burning.

A sound of groaning afterwards, Duan Shun Jie couldn’t bear it any longer and released the hot fluid all at once, but Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng still persisted for a little longer before shooting out the seminal fluid on the space between

Duan Shun Jie's thighs. A large number of whitish fluid dripped from the thighs' base, nearly soaked all part of his thighs.

Duan Shun Jie in an extreme awkwardness tried to get up to wipe clean his body, but being held firmly on Xuan Yuan's bosom, not allowing him to move.

"Do you remember, our first time was also in a mountain cave..." Xuan Yuan's voice was low and deep in his ear, combined with this moment's ambiguous atmosphere, practically caused Duan Shun Jie's whole body to tremble because of this.

"Mm. That what seven steps disorder snake..." Taking a deep breath for a while, Duan Shun Jie's voice finally didn't shake as greatly anymore.

"Eh, you still believe? That was made up to deceive you." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng actually softly laughed, bluntly interrupted him, said, "I went to your barrack to spy before war, found out that you are actually the Pingnan's Commander in Chief, also realized that you seemingly harbor feelings for me, then set the trap waiting for you to be fooled..."

The wind blew in, a little bit cold. Duan Shun Jie felt that the paste on his whole pair of thighs seminal fluid gradually became cold. That sticky greasy and icy-cold feeling was really like sticking in his heart --- cold to the bone, couldn't be taken off, unable to be wiped, like a moment of branding left a mark for his lifetime.

"Now that you know, everything was not more than a trap, will you hate me?" Maybe the peculiar atmosphere of the night in the mountain, had caused Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to ask a question so unlike him to ask.

Duan Shun Jie straightforwardly shook his head, "Never. I will never hate you."

I will always love you, until the end of my life --- this next line, Duan Shun Jie didn't say it out loud. He could feel the scalding hot feeling dripped and tricked filling the pit of his stomach, heavy to the point of unbearable.

This love was such a sorrowful path, coming to this point, he had been wounded all over, but the happiness that belonged to two people in love, in the end, he only had a little bit. Like tonight, this kind of brief interaction with Xuan Yuan, would be his forever cherished happy memory.

Then how about you? Have you ever liked me a little...even for just a little bit?

Although this subject had been swirling in Duan Shun Jie's mind for a thousand times, in the end, he had never asked it out loud --- he had known that the answer would ruthlessly rip him apart, why the need to force others to take a knife to pierce through his chest again.

Anguishly swallowed down the jealousy toward Xuan Yuan's lover in his imagination, Duan Shun Jie had a clearer understanding than anybody else, that lover absolutely would never be him.

Perhaps not long ago at Qing'an city, being able to die for Xuan Yuan could be counted as the best ending for him. In that case, maybe on a certain day, Xuan Yuan would recall him in a flash of thoughts.

Sensing Xuan Yuan's soft and warm lips fell on his neck, his voice was gentle to the point of inaudible : "Those things indeed I have wronged you. But a real man both in his life and in this world, aspire to travel far and make his mark⁴. I was born as Datong's Imperial member, getting rid of the obstruction for the sake of the Imperium is my destiny. Hence, from this day on, if there is still a part that I wronged you, I ask you to consider this and beg for your forgiveness."

Got to know Xuan Yuan for this long, this line seemingly was his sincerest heartfelt words. Duan Shun Jie faced with Xuan Yuan's rare earnesty, had nothing to say in reply. But he could see even clearer that they were destined to

have a hopeless ending.

If I were a woman, Xuan Yuan, would you pity me a little?

With his heart filled of this kind of cruel self-torturing thoughts, Duan Shun Jie finally couldn't withstand the sleepiness brought by the pain of his deep wound as well as the tiredness of lovemaking, in Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's embrace, he fell asleep.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 13

Notes

1. To watch with folded arms (id): To look on without lifting a finger, to look on unconcerned.
 2. 2. Vice General, Even if he is a General, but the highest Commander clearly is Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, thus he and other Generals would be "vice".
 3. Steal chickens and dogs-pilfer (id): an idiom for a man who is always having affairs with women.
 4. Aspire to travel far and make his mark: aspire to leave some memorable merits behind.
- Current Mood: 🙄 annoyed

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 14



luxiufer.livejournal.com/39260.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 14



Although deep in his heart he genuinely prayed the days alone with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng could continue like this forever, but Duan Shun Jie himself knew that this was not more than only a pathetic dream. Pei Jin Tian dispatched a good number of their skilled masters, in no time they had found the two, guarded them and successfully returned to Shudu City.

According to the originally decided plan, Xuan Yuan was ready to attack Qing'an City at an immediate time. But Ping Tian Sect's unexpected appearance had disrupted his plan. Because he was still wounded all over, Duan Shun Jie was banned from attending all of the strategic meetings. The whole day he could only boringly daze in his tent, he felt that he had almost gone crazy because of boredom.

The wounds on his body slowly had turned better, the wound on his right shoulder all along still couldn't recover completely. Even if he had looked for the famous doctors in the city, but all of the doctors said the arrow had injured the arm's nerve, though the hand wouldn't be completely disabled, but definitely wouldn't be as agile anymore.

For a warrior, unable to hold the sword had what kind of implication, Duan Shun Jie was undoubtedly clear of it. Before he came to know Xuan Yuan, he probably wouldn't pay as much attention to such a wound. However, he could go into a war for his sake seemingly had become the only reason for Xuan Yuan to let him stay, if even this single usefulness of him he also lost, maybe sooner or later he would be cast aside.

The unable to be told terrified feeling, everyday occupying Duan Shun Jie's mind. He changed little by little, to the point he even didn't dare to see anyone, truly afraid that others would report about his condition to Xuan Yuan. Everyday he was desperately training his arm in hopes to recover its former agility, as a result, each time he tried, each time he was defeated by tears.

Furthermore, the more you are afraid of one thing, the more that thing would happen. One day, Xuan Yuan finally appeared in Duan Shun Jie's tent for the first time after they returned to Shudu city.

"Xi Cheng..." The moment he caught a glimpse of that beautiful face, Duan Shun Jie couldn't help but be pleasantly surprised. But right at the moment he was reminded about his own condition, he stopped his tongue.

Xuan Yuan appeared to be somewhat weary, after staring at Duan Shun Jie for a while, he walked to the bed side to sit.

"I heard from Doctor Hu, your right hand seems to be having a problem?" Xuan Yuan upon opening his mouth, his first line was straight to Duan Shun Jie's wound, causing him to be flustered in an instant.

"There is none...only the recovery is a little bit slow, that's all. After some time, definitely it will totally recover." As he was saying this, Duan Shun Jie's right hand was curling up and trembling without his awareness.

"Is it?" In a lightning speed, Xuan Yuan already walked to him and seized his left arm. His right hand pulled down the hanging on Duan Shun Jie's neck jade pendant then lifted it up high, "If there is no problem, just stretch out your hand to take this back!"

That Jade pendant was a memento given to him by Xuan Yuan, ever since receiving it, it had never left Duan Shun Jie's body. Being unexpectedly taken away, his heart had a kind of unspeakable anxiety. But no matter how much he struggled, his right hand indeed couldn't be lifted no matter how he tried. The more anxious he was, the more he

was unable to do it.

Seeing that Duan Shun Jie anxious to the point his forehead had emitted sweat, Xuan Yuan's eyes became stern, then he loosened the hand which restrained his left arm. He saw Duan Shun Jie swiftly used his left hand to get the jade pendant, and awkwardly squeezed it back to his bosom.

A "Clang" sound. Xuan Yuan had taken out his sword and threw it to Duan Shun Jie, coldly said, "Take it. Do a random sword play style for me."

Staring at the shining long sword, Duan Shun Jie even after a long while, still didn't reach out his hand to pick it up -- he himself understood in what kind of state he was at the moment, even his fingers were not too agile so how could he have enough power to perform a sword play. Not to mention, his right hand basically hadn't had enough strength to hold a sword.

Xuan Yuan saw him like this, his face became dark at once: "Since it is like this, tomorrow you just go back to Tong'an first and await orders there. Datong's army doesn't need a General who couldn't even hold a sword."

"Xi Cheng..." Although he had known Xuan Yuan was a cold and cruel man through and through, but when he was truly faced with his coldness, Duan Shun Jie still couldn't bear it.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng bent down to get the long sword on the ground, then coldly glanced at Duan Shun Jie, turned his body ready to leave.

"Don't you go now!" Duan Shun Jie acted without taking time to think as he moved his body sideways to block the exit, wanted to stop him from leaving.

He couldn't accept that their fated connection ended just like this. Whilst his heart understood, his position in Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's heart was not more than that, but when he had to face with this kind of reality, he was hurt to the point of being unable to accept.

"What else do you want to say?" All along, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's face was indifferent. Upon seeing this Duan Shun Jie had an immeasurable misery and sadness.

"Don't ask me to return to Tong'an. If Datong does not need an unable to hold a sword General, then it is better to just demote me to an ordinary soldier, to always be there for somebody at their beck and call, could still have a little usefulness..." Saying these kinds of words, even Duan Shun Jie himself could feel that he was miserable and pitiful to the utmost point. But no matter how, he didn't want to give up. If they really separated just like this, by the time Xuan Yuan returns back to Tong'an, maybe the two had become strangers whom one passed in the street.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng sneered: "Duan Shun Jie, you said this line, you yourself are ashamed or not! You could be said as one of the commanding presence. Pestering again and again like this, what is the point? This time He Chuan Lin raised an army not like the former rebels. You dragging your wounded body, could only play the part of dying in front of Qing'an city."

"Then just let me die. If you want me to leave, then it would be better if you didn't save me that day. Just let me drown to death in that lake." Thinking about it all over and over again, only caused him deep limitless hurt. Duan Shun Jie also couldn't be reasoned with anymore, he unexpectedly let out the swirling in his mind heartfelt words.

Xuan Yuan's expression became vicious at once. His tone of speaking somewhat violent: "You think I wanted to save you? If not taking into consideration that you had sacrificed yourself to help me, I would never care whether you are dead or alive! But since now I already saved you with all my might, you don't ever think to just die on me as you please!"

"You..." At first indeed toward Xuan Yuan's action in rescuing him, he faintly conceived a dim illusion. Now knowing

that he could do such thing unlike him to do actually was because he didn't want to owe him a favor, Duan Shun Jie felt a violent pang in his heart. But unfortunately, such a clumsy speaker like him could never outspoke Xuan Yuan. He could only glare furiously at him without the ability to refute him.

"Since you also know that you are being unreasonable then just don't say anything. Coincidentally, I also want to go back to Tong'an. I will go with you." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng creased his brows, extending his hand to push Duan Shun Jie away, left straightaway. For no reason left behind a bafflement for Duan Shun Jie.

Like this he anxiously and fearfully passed the night. The next day, early in the morning, sure enough Xuan Yuan's personal bodyguards came to secretly lead him out. The party of several tens of people actually left the frontline at this critical time, naturally couldn't let the mass of people be aware of. Xuan Yuan even picked a common without carrying the Imperial Family crest carriage to ride on.

Sitting with him in the same carriage, looking at Xuan Yuan's solemn expression, Duan Shun Jie felt that his own future had already become even more hazy, completely had no way to be grasped.

The party was going to the direction of Tong'an. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng all along didn't reveal the reason why he wanted to go back to Tong'an, only that his countenance day by day had become gloomier, it was as if he was not happy at all.

Moving forward like this for several days, the party finally arrived at the border of Tong'an Capital. Strangely, Xuan Yuan didn't return to his Seventh Prince's Manor at all, but secretly entered a house outside Tong'an City.

This house was estimated as Xuan Yuan's secretly bought private property. The size was not big at all, but the building was somewhat refined. The gate didn't even have a piece of banner, if not clearly been told, no one would ever have thought that this was the residence of the one who held the power to overturn the world, The Regent Prince.

"Since you have returned together with me, just stay together in this place. Remember, absolutely may not let the news about me returning to Tong'an leaking out. Even to Ouyang Si Qi also do not tell." Arranged for Duan Shun Jie a wing room, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng a little weird kept on warning him.

The next door of this wing room was Xuan Yuan's room. Seeing that he seemingly didn't have the intention to just cast him aside, Duan Shun Jie even though puzzled, but what he felt more was the unexpected delight. Of course he wouldn't consider getting to the heart of the matter, just meekly agreed to him.

The following several days, Xuan Yuan's actions became even stranger. During the day, most of the time he wouldn't be at home, went out until dusk and returned home at nightfall. Once in a while, there would be someone who came to visit, also came secretly, stealthy went back. Duan Shun Jie had once run into an oldman in civilian clothes who came to pay a visit. When he carefully looked, that person was actually one who had the utmost influence in court, the Left Prime Minister Wang Qi Zhong, also the father of Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's wife, Wang Shi. He was his most powerful supporter in the court --- judging from this, Xuan Yuan hurriedly returned from the frontline, there must be something very important.

Duan Shun Jie naturally became a little worried. But he also knew, Xuan Yuan wouldn't be happy if he asked more about the matter. Besides, Xuan Yuan still came to his room at night already made him happy beyond expectation, of course he wouldn't think about investigating so as not to offend Xuan Yuan and make him unhappy.

Probably he was showing some understanding for Duan Shun Jie's injury that still hadn't fully recovered yet, Xuan Yuan on the bed, compared to him in the past, had become gentler. When they met, they also would casually talk about the daily trivial matters. Upon a careful thought, these days were actually the most peaceful and the happiest days they spent together ever since they knew each other.

Stayed at the outskirts for roughly several tens of days, Xuan Yuan led Duan Shun Jie and the others to go back to his Regent Prince's residence. As a matter of fact, it couldn't be said that he was invited, but Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng from the start to the end didn't let him leave. Duan Shun Jie, as a matter of course, moved when he moved.

Entering the Royal Residence, in the middle of the main room, a dark mass of a crowd of beautiful women dressed up in the Palace's robes caused Duan Shun Jie to jump out of shock. Led by a graceful woman, they all greeted Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng in unison, wishing for his health. Then this crowd of beautiful women was actually his wives.

Since time immemorial, all of the males of the Imperial family were refined and tasteful, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was in the center of those outstanding people. Duan Shun Jie despite this had known the fact about Xuan Yuan already being married, however, knowing and seeing with his own eyes he and his wives together were totally two different situations. Looking at those women's gentle faces and delicate postures, he himself couldn't tell what kind of flavor he felt in his heart.

"Xi... Xuan Yuan, I will go out first, I will wait at outside." Seeing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's personal attendants one after another left out from the main hall, Duan Shun Jie felt that it would be better if he also left.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was still waving his hand, said in a low voice: "You don't know your way, don't go wandering outside. Just sit."

Duan Shun Jie still wanted to say something but could sense that the line of vision of all of the women in the main hall was focusing on him, instantly he felt extremely uncomfortable, he didn't wish to attract more attention by debating, then at his own accord he sought for an unnoticeable seat to sit.

His ears could hear that graceful beauty worriedly asked Xuan Yuan: "Prince, heard from Concubine Yan, Sister Si Qi's case seemingly rather troublesome, how is it now?"

Hearing Si Qi those two words, Duan Shun Jie immediately became nervous. Thinking back, in this filled with women hall, indeed, Ouyang Si Qi was nowhere to be seen. At first he thought she was about to give birth to a child so her body was not comfortable. But now, looks like it had some other secrets.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's manner of speaking was all along calm and collected: "Having Father-in-Law help to put in good words, now it isn't as troublesome anymore. Only that Imperial Father's intention is, Ouyang's family bloodline is not suitable to stay in the Imperial Family. Allow me to wait until Si Qi gives birth to my child, after that send her to Dali Temple."

Dali Temple was an institution to trial Datong's court nobleman or noblewoman who had committed a crime. Si Qi was the daughter of the traitor, Ouyang Fa De. According to the law, all of the traitor's relatives should be executed to set example. Even if she was the Prince's wife, but once she entered Dali Temple, most probably everything points to disaster.

Lightly conversed for a little more, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng glanced sideways to see that Duan Shun Jie's whole face had become deathly pale while staring at him. Using the excuse of extremely tired from just hurriedly returned from a long journey, he let the females to leave first.

"Xi Cheng, what has happened? Si Qi, she..." Seeing in the hall only remained himself and Xuan Yuan, Duan Shun Jie could no longer restrain his anxiety, opened his mouth to ask.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng only made a "Don't speak" signal, softly said: "Here is not too convenient to talk. Come with me to the study."

Following behind Xuan Yuan entering the study, Duan Shun Jie could sense that the matter was not too good, could only beg Xuan Yuan to quickly tell the sequence of the events to him.

Basically, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's time and again meritorious military service then obtained the title of Regent Prince had caused the Crown Prince's supporters in the court to be thrown into a panic. The Right Prime Minister as the leader of Crown Prince's political faction, searched everywhere to find evidence of his fault. Though couldn't find anything to be exposed on the surface, indeed, they dug out the affair of Ouyang Si Qi. Ouyang Si Qi was the great traitor Ouyang Fa De's only daughter, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng had accepted her to be his concubine, in addition, she entered the Seventh Prince's Manor with a big belly. This matter was actually not a really serious matter, however, the Crown Prince's faction exaggerated it from implication to become a clear evidence that Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng harbored an intention to revolt.

Couldn't oppose the Officials' again and again petitions, adding more in his heart, toward Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng actually concealed this urgent matter from him, he felt extremely furious, Emperor Feng Zong urgently decreed to summon him still on an expedition seventh son. Replaced him with the Crown Prince, appointed him out to a war, to give him an opportunity to build his impressive merit.

After receiving the Imperial Edict, Xuan Yuan of course knew if he returned to the Capital directly facing the fury of Imperial Father would be extremely unwise. On the pretext of still on the road, he secretly shifted his departure to an earlier date, on his other residence he assigned the Left Prime Minister and the others to help him put in good words for him, saying Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's reason for marrying Ouyang Si Qi was all affiliated to the advantage of the nation. As the outcome, these several days, Feng Zong's anger finally slightly subdued. Loosened his tone, said, as long as Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng waited until Ouyang Si Qi gave birth, afterwards sent her to Dali Temple to await for her trial, then he wouldn't look into this matter again.

Hearing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng lightly spoke about the matter, Duan Shun Jie was no longer able to maintain his cool. This was not a small thing¹, it could be said, this directly involved with himself and Si Qi's future's fate. If Xuan Yuan really wanted to send Si Qi to Dali Temple, maybe due to Si Qi's unbending temperament, absolutely couldn't be reasoned with. If something happened to Si Qi, how could he watch with folded arms.

But judging by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng that kind of I-have-a-well-thought-plan expression, Duan Shun Jie's mind was flooded with ominous premonition at once.

"Xi Cheng, you...Do you by chance really want to go accordingly to your Imperial Father's intention?" Duan Shun Jie couldn't imagine he could be this ruthless toward his future child's mother.

"Things have come to this point, this is also the only way. If not sacrificing her, no matter it is you or me, in this Tong'an City, it will be hard to have a foothold." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's tone was calm to the extreme, obviously already analyzed the gains and losses for numerous times.

"Xi Cheng. Her belly still has your child, how can you be this heartless! If it truly can't be avoided, just let me take Si Qi to leave Tong'an. You can put the blame on me, say it was me who took Si Qi away by force..." Duan Shun Jie was unable to describe the anxiety in his heart. Even if Ouyang Si Qi harbored hatred towards him, after all, she was his only sister. How could he only helplessly see her being shoved to the road of ruin --- moreover, she and Xuan Yuan got to know each other and got entangled, no matter what, he couldn't just escape from his responsibility.

"If not because she has a child, maybe since earlier she had been ordered to commit suicide. Also, how can you be so naïve? Allow you to take her away, even if I said I didn't know anything, who didn't know that you are my subordinate. Imperial Father must suspect I acted wrongly out of personal considerations and let her go. As the result, with me refusing to hand her over would have what difference!"

Saying this and that, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng actually was weighing on his position in the court, no matter what it takes, couldn't afford to lose his position in Feng Zong's heart. Duan Shun Jie could only feel as if being poured by cold water, from head to the toe wet kind of coldness, penetrating his heart. Nearly couldn't believe that his most beloved

one was actually this kind of coldblooded heartless man.

Looking at Duan Shun Jie's expression, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng also knew that he was bitterly disappointed. But the matter was already up to this point, to keep himself and him safe from damage, this was the only workable scheme. Patting Duan Shun Jie's shoulder, Xuan Yuan knew he could only let him slowly accept the reality by himself.

"I am going to the Palace. Your place, I have ordered the housekeeper to arrange. You go and rest properly. Regarding Si Qi, I will think of a way. You don't have to mind it. It could be said you had made it up for her. If not because of you, she would be regarded as the rebel and beheaded since long ago, how could she still have the chance to enter the door of my Imperial Manor." Casually explained to him with several simple words, Xuan Yuan hurriedly left, leaving Duan Shun Jie alone in the study.

After seeing his handicapped arm, Xuan Yuan actually didn't immediately cast him away as he had originally presumed, Duan Shun Jie at first thought that as long as he agreed to accept the compromise he would beg him to let him stay by his side. But looks like the fate had decided that he and Xuan Yuan weren't destined to be together for long. Exactly at the moment when he saw a gleam of light for this love, he had to break off the relations with him.

Under this kind of circumstances, aside from him, who else could help Si Qi? Upon the thought that she was sacrificed as a tool to show one's devotion by her loved with all her heart's husband, Duan Shun Jie could no longer be able to stay in this place for any moment. His mind was filled with the thoughts of how to take Si Qi and leave Tong'an.

End of Fallen Hero Chapter 14

Notes:

1). This is not a small thing (id): to have a serious matter at hand.

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 15



luxiufer.livejournal.com/39557.html

The Fallen Hero Chapter 15

Out from the study, as expected, there was the Imperial Manor's young male servant who waited upon him, guided Duan Shun Jie to see the housekeeper.



The housekeeper was about a forty year old middle-aged man. His manner was extremely polite. The him who had served in the Manor for a long time, of course knew the concept of absolutely do not consciously offend others. Moreover, Duan Shun Jie was Pingnan's well-known General, came over and pledging his allegiance to Datong was Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's great achievement, also, Xuan Yuan's concern toward him made the housekeeper feel that this person and his Master's relationship was not ordinary at all.

Seeing the housekeeper rather respectful towards him, Duan Shun Jie of course wouldn't let go of this opportunity. Seeing him arrange for him a place to stay then prepared to leave, he busily called out to him: "Mister, please wait a moment."

The housekeeper quickly stopped his step, turned his body: "General Duan, what order do you have?"

"I want to ask you about someone. Is Lady Ouyang in the Manor?"

The housekeeper had a slight doubt, pondering for a while, he asked back: "Is she that coming from Pingnan Miss Ouyang..."

"Yes, yes." Thinking again, he was a man, asking about another's wife seemed a little odd. Duan Shun Jie busily explained, "She and I are old acquaintances. This time, there is a friend of her who entrusted me a letter to give to her, so I want to see her and have a chat."

The housekeeper of course wouldn't know the real nature of Duan Shun Jie and Ouyang Si Qi's relationship. Greeting seemed not to be suspicious at all, but his face was still rather hesitating: "General Duan wanting to see her is actually not a problem, but this Ouyang Lady because she's about to give birth, The Lord had specifically arranged a secluded place, not that convenient to see a guest."

"That is fine. Maybe I can ask Mister to let me see the one who is in charge of attending to Lady Ouyang, her maid also can." Duan Shun Jie worried if he pressed on too much he would attract his suspicion, he busily indicated that not seeing Ouyang Si Qi directly also could do.

"This..." The housekeeper fell silent for a while, seemingly felt that Duan Shun Jie's request was not too much, he nodded his head to say he agreed. "I will send a word to the maid of Ouyang Lady, ask her to come here to see you, is this alright?" Duan Shun Jie of course fully agreed.

Waiting for Ouyang's maid to appear was a bit boring, Duan Shun Jie couldn't help but walk out from the room and in the yard which Xuan Yuan had appointed for him to stroll all around. The yard was not too big, but quiet and secluded. Aside from the main room, there were two winged rooms by the both sides. In front of the door of the yard, grew some didn't-know-what-was-the-name flowers and trees, yet it was such an elegant and refined set.

If there was not this Ouyang Si Qi's matter, maybe he would happily stay in this small world. Just like Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's wives and concubines, everyday only waiting for him to appear.

Thinking and thinking, his heart gradually gave rise to a spell of chill.

Recalling the him at the first time when he descended from Zhongnan's Mountain, what kind of enormously proud and smug man he was, swore to overthrow Datong's tyranny and considered it as his main duty, wholeheartedly wanted to save the world and its people, how could he expect that the him several years later would actually become such an ambitionless and condescended to take the place inside Datong's Prince's Manor side yard, taking all of his hope and put it on a man who doesn't love him.

Just like this sitting alone with his thoughts running wild, Duan Shun Jie eyed that the sky's color had turned dark, yet still no one appeared. Thought to himself, if Xuan Yuan returned from Palace, it would be hard to execute the plan, he walked to the door intending to make the discreet inquiries all around by himself.

Exactly when he reached the door, he saw a tall and lanky beautiful maiden entering the yard's door.

"Excuse me, is General Duan in?" As the maiden entered the yard she raised her voice to ask.

Duan Shun Jie busily greeted her: "Miss, I am Duan Shun Jie. Are you from Lady Ouyang place?"

"Servant¹ is the one attending to Lady Ouyang, Cui Huan. Ordered to come here to meet General Duan." Seeing Duan Shun Jie, the maiden busily lowered her head respectfully, then followed him to enter the room.

"I am your Lady's old acquaintance from Pingnan. Here is the letter from her good friend for her, will trouble miss to pass it on my behalf." Duan Shun Jie while speaking, was fishing out from his bosom the earlier had been prepared envelope and handed it over to Cui Huan.

Cui Huan accepted it properly, seeing that Duan Shun Jie seemed like he still had something to ask, she said: "General Duan do you still have anything to ask?"

"How is your Lady?" Duan Shun Jie adopted a manner of one former days friend should be concerned about attitude, lightly asked about her well-being.

"Lady is doing well, only that she is about giving birth soon, not convenient to meet guests, hope General Duan can excuse her." This Cui Huan even if a maidservant, her bearing compared to the normal girl of humble birth was even more tasteful and appropriate. Obviously the manor of the Seventh Prince was of hidden dragons crouching tigers², not just any ordinary rich and powerful family could compare.

Of course this made him sigh, yet Duan Shun Jie could only keep it to himself. Knowing that he wouldn't get anything from Cui Huan, he raised his body to send the guest off.

Cui Huan refined and courteously took her leave, out from the yard rather far still she did not forget to look back and stare at the far place. Seeing that nobody was following her, only then could she continue to advance in ease.

Putting into full use his air-kungfu skill Duan Shun Jie inwardly laughed: If his whereabouts could be seen by this not too skilled in martial arts maiden, then he would have truly wronged his own self who had trained hard for tens of years in the Zhongnan Mountain.

Ouyang Si Qi's residential place was seemingly rather far. Duan Shun Jie following behind Cui Huan for quite a long while before he could see her entering a rather secluded building.

Walking quietly on his tiptoe, he then went up the ridge of the roof of the building to hide. He saw Cui Huan talking with a man dressed up like a guard in front of the building door.

"...nothing. How is Lady?" He couldn't hear clearly the first line of the conversation, maybe talking about the meeting with him situation.

He listened to the man in guard's clothing say: "Nothing. The same old thing. Still unwilling to eat."

That Cui Huan whole face was extremely angry: "This Lady really likes to repeat something over and over again. Already got herself into this wretched situation yet still want to put on her haughty airs. Clearly knew that if something bad happened, Master will surely take our heads away."

"That's right. That's right." The guard's whole face was also bitter, "No matter what, she is still the Master's woman. Master also only ordered us that we must take care of her, didn't say we could not regard her as our Lady...She ought to vent all of her temper on us."

Cui Huan shook her head then excused herself to enter the room. Duan Shun Jie certainly wouldn't take this mediocre martial artist guard into consideration. At will, he put into good use his air-kungfu then following her slipping into the room.

Maybe because Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng saw that Ouyang Si Qi was enduring this kind of belly so she would be unable to flee, inside the room there wasn't a single guard. Once Duan Shun Jie entered the inner hall, he could hear the voice of Cui Huan.

"Lady, you eat a little alright? You don't feel hungry, but the child wouldn't be able to cope with it."

But there was no voice of reply, it seemed like Ouyang Si Qi resorted to a non-cooperative resisting manner.

"Lady..." Cui Huan naggingly persuaded her for a long while, Ouyang Si Qi was still not uttering a word.

"Then... Your servant will retreat. I placed the dinner for you here. If you need me, just call me to wait on you."

Seeing Cui Huan about to go out, Duan Shun Jie busily hid behind the curtain. Looking at Cui Huan's whole face walked out unhappily, waited until she passed by him, he stretched out his hand to press on her sleeping point on her nape. Cui Huan didn't even make a groaning sound then just collapse. Duan Shun Jie quickly dragged her body to hide her behind the curtain. He then moved sideways to squeeze himself into inner room.

The sitting on the bedside Ouyang Si Qi, upon the sight of a black shadow opened her mouth to scream. Duan Shun Jie quickly dashed to cover her mouth, seeing Ouyang Si Qi waved her hand to signal that she wouldn't scream, by then he let go.

"Why is it you!" Ouyang Si Qi now was already completely a sight of pregnant woman. Except for her high-bridged nose, her face was slightly swollen. Although a little thin and pallid, and looks pathetic, but her bearing still was as menacing as before.

Duan Shun Jie of course knew Ouyang Si Qi wouldn't show him any good face. But he could careless for this situation before his eyes, he only cared to lower his voice as much as possible: "Si Qi. I beg you to trust me this one time. You quickly come with me. I will send you to Zhongnan Mountain, to my Master's place."

Ouyang Si Qi's expression changed. When Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng made her move into this secluded building only told her not to go out before the due time. However, several days ago, when she said she want to go for a stroll on the backyard garden, the guard nervously didn't let her go, it was as if she was being put under house arrest. Even when she used a hunger strike no one seemed to pay attention. Since earlier she had faintly felt that the situation was not good. And now Duan Shun Jie saying such a thing, more to confirm her heart's ominous premonition.

But her face would never give the impression of weakness in front of Duan Shun Jie, coldly she said: "Now you are pretending to be what good person? If not because of you, how can I get into this plight?"

Duan Shun Jie's heart was burning with impatience, but could only count by fives and tens³ in explaining the situation. When he said that Xuan Yuan intended to send her to Dali Temple after she gave birth, Ouyang Si Qi's face already lost its color and turned to a deathly pale color.

“Si Qi, It is me who had wronged you. You just come with me first, wait until you have arrived to a safer place, until then it still won’t be too late to blame me again.”

Trying to persuade her for more than half a day, Ouyang Si Qi still looked in a trance without responding. Duan Shun Jie almost knelt down to beg her. “Si Qi, just regard it as your Brother begging you this time. You don’t cherish yourself, still you have to consider your child...”

Perhaps the “child” word had encouraged Ouyang Si Qi. Her in trance expression disappeared in an instant. Got the support to help her stand up, said: “Let’s go! But next time, this “brother” word you absolutely don’t ever mention again. Also don’t think that by helping me one time I will help you put in good word to the Lord of Zhongnan.”

Being suspected as wanted to use this as pretext to be forgiven by his Master and Brothers, Duan Shun Jie truly felt a grievance. But the sky color had turned to dark, he was afraid Xuan Yuan had returned to Manor and noticed, so he didn’t dare to argue further with Ouyang Si Qi. He could only help her to leave from the window at the back.

Dragging Ouyang Si Qi with her almost ready to give birth body, abosultely unable to unfold his air-kungfu, Duan Shun Jie could only help her to walk in the secluded area in the Manor. When they ran into people, they hid in the hidden place by the path. If couldn’t hide then just rapidly hit the enemy to make them collapse. With much difficulty, they finally got close to the Royal Manor’s back door.

It was said as a back door, but there were two guards to stand on guard. Duan Shun Jie hid Ouyang Si Qi first then he walked forward to talk to them. Recognizing Duan Shun Jie as their Master’s friend, the guards of course respectfully came to talk, but as sudden as a flash of lightning, they were hit down on the ground by Duan Shun Jie.

Pulling Ouyang Si Qi until they were out of the Royal Manor, Duan Shun Jie immediately bought a carriage at the nearest town and let Ouyang Si Qi to ride on it while he served as the cart’s driver, went to the direction of Tong’an City’s gate.

Due to his title as Pingnan General, they successfully went out of Tong’an. Duan Shun Jie knew, if Xuan Yuan had realized, surely he would lead a pursuer team to catch up to them. He gave up the main road and turned to the secluded little path, desperately dashed toward Mount Zhongnan. Had predicted that Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng could worry about the sensitivity of their status, did not publish them as wanted criminal, that’s why Duan Shun Jie still dared from time to time to go to small towns to buy food and clothes.

This day in the evening, both of them had arrived at an outskirts of a town. Just going for one more day they already could entered Mount Zhongnan’s border. Ouyang Si Qi unexpectedly made an uproar, shouting her stomach was hurt and unwilling to go on. Duan Shun Jie could only find an uninhabited broken shrine for her to settle down, intending to warm the meal for her to eat and rest for a while before continuing to go.

Who could have thought, Ouyang Si Qi couldn’t hold out even more. Seeing her gasping with an extremely suffering face, Duan Shun Jie, being inexperienced also could guess that she was about to give birth. In an instant, in panic he busily rushed into a town and searched for an experienced midwife all over the town. With much difficulty he found a midwife, but the midwife said she needed to prescribe some essential medicine before she could go. Under this having no choice situation, Duan Shun Jie could only give the midwife the detailed location then he himself rushed back to look after Ouyang Si Qi.

At the time when he returned, Ouyang Si Qi already pained to the point of having an unclear consciousness. Holding her hand tightly, Duan Shun Jie could only watch as Ouyang Si Qi raged and groaned unceasingly. He wanted to make haste but couldn’t help with anything, anxious and nearly let his tears drop.

Waited for a long time, still couldn’t see the midwife coming, Duan Shun Jie indistinctly felt that something was off. However, Ouyang Si Qi’s pained face had completely disrupted his senses, he could only tightly hold the continuously jolting Ouyang Si Qi, intending to alleviate her pain a little.

"Quick, quick go and boil some water! You... You help me deliver the child..." Most probably aware that she already couldn't hold out until the midwife came, Ouyang Si Qi struggled to make a causing one to be shocked decision.

"I..." By this time, the situation already didn't allow him to decline. He could only employ his utmost pace to gather the firewood from all around to heat up water. In accordance to Ouyang Si Qi's signal, he spread a clean white cloth.

Hadn't poured the boiled water to fill the jar, in the quiet broken shrine, raised a noise of a loud and clear voice of a wailing infant. Duan Shun Jie already couldn't describe his mood. Using the burnt on the fire sword to cut off the baby umbilical cord, when he checked on Ouyang Si Qi, she already lost her strength and fainted.

He busily took off his outer garment, tore it into several cloths, after soaked it, he helped to wipe clean and tidy up the baby and Ouyang Si Qi. Also took out from cloth-wrapper, the white middle layer change-cloth to wrap the baby as swaddling clothes. The little baby still didn't stop the wailing, but this loud and clear noise already couldn't conceal the sound of the horse's hoof from all around.

The Duan Shun Jie whose heart since earlier had been in confusion, by this realized that the situation was not right. Hugging the baby and charged out of the broken shrine, he was finally aware that the place actually had been surrounded from all directions. The soldiers in Datong's army most elite division's uniform unceasingly urged their horse to move forward to lessen the circle --- he who had been thrown into disorder by Ouyang Si Qi's giving birth matter unexpectedly thoroughly couldn't sense the pursuers had come. Duan Shun Jie clearly understood, the him this time, taking an unconscious woman and a newly born baby, no matter what he did, it would still be impossible to escape smoothly.

Things have come to this point, maybe the Heaven has decided that we brother and sister could only die together.

The circumstances was this desperate, Duan Shun Jie's heart abnormally became calm.

Not to mind the coming closer and closer horse's hoof sound, he entered the shrine. He put the baby in front of Ouyang Si Qi's chest, let it found and sucked the mother's milk by itself.

When Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng entered, before his eyes was this scene --- Duan Shun Jie's back was carrying a sleeping baby whose whole face satisfied after eating to its heart content, like a Guardian God, blocking the way in front of Ouyang Si Qi.

"You don't come here." Seeing Xuan Yuan not at all stopping his step, Duan Shun Jie bent his waist, using his left hand to lift the long sword by his side, the tip of the sword was pointed at Xuan Yuan.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's face became stern at once, stopping his steps, his voice seemingly more freezing than the ten thousand year old black ice: "If I didn't know better, looking at you like this, roughly will really think that you are the father of this child."

Breaking off the relationship with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng under this kind of circumstances, Duan Shun Jie's heart was as if dripping blood. Yet, getting entangled in this ill-fated relationship, he had committed sin after sin. Since it had come to this, if still not interfered in Xuan Yuan taking Ouyang Si Qi as a mean to get into his Imperial Father's good side, he himself probably also couldn't forgive himself.

If it was the former days him, maybe he still had the chance if he put all of him into a fight with Xuan Yuan, but the him who needed to protect a newborn baby, a weak married woman, right hand not agile, perfectly understood, today even if he sacrificed his life he still might not be good enough. But if wanted him to abandon Ouyang Si Qi and escaped by himself, no matter how he didn't have the heart to do so.

His heart and head was in sharp pain, Duan Shun Jie only could desperately endure the impulse to let the tears flow.

"If you want to take Si Qi, you have to step on my dead body first." The hand which was holding the sword firmly

made a knead, Duan Shun Jie diligently tried to ignore the left hand's out of sort kind of feeling.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's response was facing upwards and made a haha loud laughter. After the laughter had ended, his face all solemn, his pair of eyes' murderous look became visible.

"Duan Shun Jie, you are being overly naive! You think with this kind of threat I will take your demand and let you go freely? Just quickly put down your sword and make way, considering the former days' relationship, I won't make it difficult for you."

Before his eyes, this Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng had ripped down his tender and gentle mask, returned to that person in Ping'an who commanded a magnificent army with thousands of men and horses⁴ Cruel Prince, this kind of him was the real Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng --- Duan Shun Jie upon this realization slightly trembled in fear.

Since long ago had known, that gentle to the extreme Yan Xi Cheng and afterward, that the toward him saying sweet word honeyed speech Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was no more than a swindle, an illusionary being. At first it was because he wanted to use him to destroy Pingnan, then afterward, because he wanted to buy his support to make him serve Datong. Saying this and that, between the two of them from beginning to end was nothing but his own wishful thinking, down to today this kind of ending.

Just about to open his mouth to tell Xuan Yuan to dream on, beside him, Ouyang Si Qi had let out a weak groan: "Child... My child... Give me my child..." Duan Shun Jie busily turned his body. Si Qi already awoke, she was extending her arm to take the baby from his back.

Duan Shun Jie quickly supported her to sit down, squatted down to let her hold her baby while he was untying the knot in front of his chest. By the corner of his eyes he saw Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn't seem to have any intention to seize the opportunity to attack, he couldn't help but softened out his tone of speaking: "Xi Cheng, Si Qi, her feelings towards you is deep and absolute. Just now she just gave birth to your child. You just consider your husband and wife part so let them mother and child go..."

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng not in the least bit touched, his eyes became even darker to the point of unfathomable. A long while after he opened his mouth to respond: "Let them go to kindly let you be my child's appropriate father, isn't it?"

Once this line said, Duan Shun Jie and Ouyang Si Qi instantaneously lifted their heads in disbelief to look at him.

"Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, you... You are a beast!" Ouyang Si Qi could no longer bear it and cried out in anguish.

Duan Shun Jie seeing her this heartbroken, wanted to say some comforting line, but his own heart also empty and desolate like being stabbed into a big hole, could only choose to restrain with all his might the agony in his heart.

"Hmph! Who didn't know the two of you in Pingnan were man and woman in love. Duan Shun Jie, you for the sake of Ouyang Si Qi would go as far as not hesitate to..." The word already on the edge of the mouth, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng stopped his mouth at the right time, looking at his left and right, he said: "All of you out. Without my order, not even one of you are allowed to enter."

Seeing his subordinates all leaving obediently, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng then sneeringly continued: "Ouyang Si Qi, your beloved Big Brother towards you could be said as having deep and heavy feelings, for you he..."

"Shut up!" Had realized what he wanted to say, Duan Shun Jie unrestrained shouting out. He looked in disbelief at the whole satisfied face of Xuan Yuan, couldn't believe he actually wanted to tell their secret to Ouyang Si Qi.

Ouyang Si Qi was not a fool. Watching the two's manner, of course could have guessed that there was a great secret between them which they hid from her.

"Duan Shun Jie, you tell me, you two actually..." Roughly thought Duan Shun Jie had betrayed Pingnan because of

her, Ouyang Si Qi's face turned ghastly pale. "It couldn't be..."

Could see what Ouyang Si Qi was thinking about, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng burst out a haha loud laughter. "Don't get it wrong. It was the thing that happened after I crushed Pingnan."

"Xuan Yuan! If you dare to say it, I ..." Unable to imagine if Ouyang Si Qi found out about the truth of their relationship how heartbroken and desperate she could be, Duan Shun Jie even if had to die at this moment still unwilling to reveal the real relationship between him and Xuan Yuan in front of her.

Right at this moment he finally deeply understood how low and degrading was his affection, how much shameful it was, if other people came to know, he would have no face to see other people again. Such sorrowful and desperate love, he himself was surprisingly delusional with the thought it could bring him happiness. The more he thought about it, the colder his heart became, froze as the the eternal ice. Almost forfeited even the strength to speak, he could only employ his pleading eyes to look at Xuan Yuan, hoping for him to spare the very last bit of his self-esteem.

However, Xuan Yuan's eyes seemingly had frozen with the ruthless coldness. Without giving him any form of reply, only said with his deepened voice: "Duan Shun Jie, only if you obediently let Ouyang Si Qi go with me, I assure you, our affairs will forever be a secret. If you don't, I could only tell the fact to Si Qi, let her decide by herself, whether she wants to go with you or not."

With Si Qi's temper, if she found out about him and Xuan Yuan's relationship, how could she still want to accept his protection. But what other choice did Duan Shun Jie have, just said that the very last bit of his self-esteem was about to be snatched away, he still wouldn't be able to utter the word of abandoning his sister and go by himself.

Looking at Duan Shun Jie's completely troubled expression, a surge of unspeakable nameless ache gushed through Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's heart. When they were in Jinling, he had known that Duan Shun Jie and Ouyang Si Qi's personal relationship was extremely good. Seeing it like now, Duan Shun Jie with his ready to sacrifice everything to protect Ouyang Si Qi's stance, even more made his heart displeased to the fullest.

Fervently creased and twitched his brows, he made a cold laugh and said: "Duan Shun Jie, you yourself should have known, with your current situation, you basically couldn't protect anyone. Throwing down your life, all the same, Ouyang Si Qi still must return to Tong'an with me!"

Duan Shun Jie certainly knew what he had said was really as the matter of fact. If his hand hadn't been wounded prior, he probably still could put all of him into a fight against Xuan Yuan. However, presently, fighting all out with his full strength could only block him for a short while, outside still had Xuan Yuan's elite personal soldiers who eyed them menacingly. No matter which to be considered, both were to his disadvantages.

"Yet, considering that you had been in the same bed sharing pillow with me, I will also not kill to the last one⁵, as long as you leave Ouyang Si Qi behind and just go by yourself, I will not make it difficult to you." Knowing his psychological attack scheme was a success, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng continued with his deepened voice.

"Same bed sharing pillow" These four words instantly were like a lump of enormous stone dropped between Duan Shun Jie and Ouyang Si Qi.

"What?!" Ouyang Si Qi shouted out in disbelief. "Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, what nonsense are you uttering!"

Didn't dare to believe Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng actually could expose their secret like such was not his problem at all, Duan Shun Jie could only feel a spell of darkness before his eyes, his ears also heard a buzzing sound, it was as if he had lost his ability to ponder deeply. Towards Ouyang Si Qi's accusing question's, not even half a word could he reply.

He could hear Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's word after word deliberate slow and leisure speech: "If not, why do you think

such powerful Pingnan could be destroyed by me only within months? If not because Duan Shun Jie, during the war on Mount Panlong and Jinling city, in a row let the water flowing out, how can he help me to establish this great success! Hehe... Too bad, you never see his docile and gentle face when he was under my body, he is thirty percent more charming than you!" The ill and poisonous words were like a knife or arrow stabbed at Duan Shun Jie. The atmosphere seemingly at this moment had turned to become dangerous.

"You... Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng you..." Duan Shun Jie was both ashamed and furious, nearly couldn't even hold the sword, but didn't know how should he refute to Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's apparently right but actually wrong speech. Only his face turned green turned white, the blood circulation in his chest flow upside down, it seemed he was angry to the point of vomit blood.

"Me? Me what. You dare to say when on Mount Panlong you didn't on your own accord throw yourself to my embrace? Dare to say when Jinling was destroyed you didn't make love with me on the bed? Also, surrendered and turned over to Datong, wasn't it because you wanted me to continue the intimacy with you?"

Hearing Ouyang Si Qi's sharp gasped from behind him, Duan Shun Jie himself, by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's word, his consciousness had become a little blurred.

Is that so? So this engraved in heart and carved in bones⁶ affection, in Xuan Yuan's heart, from the beginning to end was merely his own carnal desire? Those numerous anguish moment seemingly had become an unbearable to look back memory. Duan Shun Jie's heart was hurt to the point even not half a word could be said, could only blankly stare at Xuan Yuan's smiling proudly face.

In a moment, he almost wished he could just turn into dust, could disappear into thin air and need not to face this cruel reality anymore.

"Duan Shun Jie, was he saying the truth?" Didn't know how long had passed, Ouyang Si Qi opened her mouth at long last. Her voice was as if being twisted with a kind of piercing ears dryness and roughness.

How to face Ouyang Si Qi and explain clearly the details of this complicated affair. Duan Shun Jie knew, no matter how he explained, he would only invite disgrace to himself. He could only keep silent, shifted his eyes to another side.

"I ask you one more time, was he saying the truth? If you don't say anything I will regard it as the truth?" Ouyang Si Qi's voice was trembling even more, more heartbreaking. Obviously she couldn't believe in this world actually could exist such a bizarre matter.

Maybe could sense the adult's state of mutual hostility atmosphere, the baby on Ouyang Si Qi's bosom suddenly woke up, made a loud wailing sound.

Ouyang Si Qi's tears also at the same time flowing out. She was crying while facing upwards and made a laugh haha laughter: "Hahahahaha...What kind of morality that was! This world actually have such bizarre thing! Duan Shun Jie, like this you actually still want to hypocritically show your concern to take me to escape from Tong'an? Heaven, Duan Shun Jie, I truly admire you. If father in the other world knew, know that that prostitute gave birth to what kind of son for him, personally spelled an end to his went through hardship to establish property, still shoved his sister into the pit of hell, don't know how furious he would be! Indeed, dragons beget dragons, phoenixes beget phoenixes. A prostitute's son must be an inborn prostitute!" Ouyang Si Qi wildly laughed like an insane woman. From the corner of her eyes, blood was dripping and rolling down unstopping, flowing on that snow white's face particularly shook one to the core.

From earlier, his heart had been beaten to pulp by Xuan Yuan's cruel word. Seeing Ouyang Si Qi so much in anguish, Duan Shun Jie still couldn't say half of the comforting line, he only felt that his consciousness gradually dimmed --- was he actually at fault?

Only loving one person, using all of his life to love him. This feeling was indeed like dirt and mud, could only meet with others' looked down upon. Until today, being pointed at his nose, verbally cursed as a male prostitute, even half of the refuting word he couldn't utter.

Unexpectedly found out Duan Shun Jie's unfortunate life experience, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was shocked. But he was a man of appearance, right away calming down, with a gentle voice said: "Si Qi, you have known about this, still want to act as if nothing happened and let Duan Shun Jie protect you? Why don't you return with me to Tong'an. I will beg Imperial Father to be lenient in dealing with you, after all, you are his grandchild's mother."

By Xuan Yuan's word she was up with a start, Ouyang Si Qi immediately looked at the baby in her bosom, the disordered eyes little by little revealed a tender and warm feeling: "Good baby, they are bad people. Baby and mama go together, we go to the place where we can be happy eternally."

Sensing that something was off, Duan Shun Jie was unable to deal with his agony anymore. Throwing himself, he still had the time to catch the ruthlessly thrown to the floor baby. Ouyang Si Qi had taken out a dagger from her bosom and with all her strength she stabbed her own chest...

"Si Qi!" Witnessing his one and only blood relative died before his eyes, Duan Shun Jie was no longer able to bear the hit, could only feel before his eyes was darkness, losing his consciousness at once.

Didn't have the time to see the expression of the only man in this world who had an intimate physical relationship with her, Ouyang Si Qi dejectedly tumbled down, finally left this made her felt an immeasurable agony and despair world.

The death of the former Lord of Pingnan's daughter didn't raise a great disturbance at all. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng announced that Ouyang Si Qi died due to difficult labor. Feng Zong's dismay towards him of course like a bamboo split when it met the knife's end⁷, even decreed an Imperial Edict to bestow Ouyang Si Qi a lavish funeral as an Imperial Concubine. The Seventh Prince's crisis could be said as a bamboo split when it met the knife's end.

The received the order to attack He Chuan Lin Crown Prince's army encountered the unexpected heavy lost. Moreover, the Crown Prince when Ping Tian Sect moved their assassin had been stabbed and suffered a severe injury. Not long after returned to Tong'an, he passed away. The court was in great uproar because of this.

The benefit from his death Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng boldly used the Jianghu force, using his surprise attack tactics to destroy Ping Tian Sect and He Chuan Lin coalition. Only needed three months to officially defeat He Chuan Lin's army, to recover the southwest⁸ strategic point. Once again established the center of attention among the people his undebatable meritorious achievements.

Under these circumstances, Feng Zong broke a rule to make an exception, making the Seventh Prince Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng as the Crown Prince. Even though the others Princes who were older than him in their heart refused it, but were at a disadvantage since there was none who could surpass his merits and achievements so they were unable to oppose.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng holding two post as the Crown Prince and the Regent Prince, double honorable positions, publicly developed an unparalleled power and influence in the court. Even Feng Zong sometimes had to look at his face color when handling matters.

Be busy in propping up his power and influence within the court, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng naturally would be too busy to attend to him. Upon hearing the news from the reporting attendant that the secretly taken into custody Duan Shun Jie had escaped, he only unhappily twitched his brows. Ordered to depose of the guard who was in charge after investigation and deal with him accordingly, he didn't make anymore reaction.

Notes:

- 1). She addressed herself as 奴婢 Nu bi, literally means: maidservant.
- 2). Hidden dragon crouching tiger (id): talented individuals in hiding, concealed talents.
- 3). Count by fives and tens (id): to narrate systematically and in full details.
- 4). A magnificent army with thousands of men and horses (id): impressive display of manpower.
- 5). To kill to the last one (id): kill all without anyone left behind, to spare none.
- 6). Engraved in heart and carved in bones (id): to remember as long as one lived.
- 7). Like a bamboo split when it met the knife's end (id): be readily solved.
- 8). (Xinan) Southwest of China, including Sichuan, Yunnan, Guizhou, and Tibet.

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 16



luxiufer.livejournal.com/40170.html

unproofed version.....

The Fallen Hero Chapter 16



It was deep* in the night. A tall wall of the Forbidden City kept it apart from the Tong'an city. Inside the wall was the world of golden bright light, outside the wall was a pitchblack cold and cheerless world, even the light on a small cup also hard to be seen.

(t/n : * it actually translated as late at night, but I like the sound of "deep in the night." LOL.... XD)

It was already late spring beginning of summer season. The late night was cold. Under The Forbidden City's high wall could only be heard the whimpering sound of the wind. In the dark, there was a lonely shadow unceasingly pacing up and down.

"To see in person but strive not to see....." The lowest as a sigh voice of a man in the tranquil night lightly raised, the voice hadn't dispelled, a light black shadow already soared into the sky, from the outer wall leaped into the inner side of the Palace.

This shadow was without a doubt the not long ago succeeded in escaping from his house arrest, Duan Shun Jie. Alone by himself he passed through many places, homeless and miserable for several months. In the very end, he still couldn't resist his heart yearning, wanted to see the face of the man who had hurt him for countless time one last time.

Didn't need anyone to tell him, Duan Shun Jie himself clearly understood that doing this was absolutely wrong. But for a man who didn't have a place to take shelter under this vast world, to put on an upright appearance was already meaningless. He wholeheartedly only wished that he could see Xuan Yuan for the very last time. As for what the consequence afterwards, the him at this moment already didn't have the time to take it into consideration.

According to common sense, the correct thing for him was he ought to hate Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng with all of his being. After all, he had deceived his feeling, responsible for his father and sister's death. Yet, up until now he still unable to ignite his hatred towards Xuan Yuan. Only his heart understood that he should give up the extravagant wish to stay beside Xuan Yuan again. Thing had come to this moment this second, the two meeting again without the need to face each other with naked sword already could be said as the best ending.

Fully used his posture to the utmost point, Duan Shun Jie diligently put his state of mind into nothingness. But be about to see Xuan Yuan indeed made his heart agitated. No matter how, he still unable to stop the myriad of thoughts from surging up.

Following behind the Palace's servant from Imperial Kitchen who served the midnight snack, Duan Shun Jie almost didn't have to spend his strength to find Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's Crown Prince's sleeping quarters location.

Making a supreme effort to hide on the roof of the study, he heaved out a mouthful of air before he finally dared to lightly lift the roof tile. From the narrow crevice he gazed down to see inside the room. Had warned himself numerous times to calm down, but right at the moment that honorable and graceful as he used to be elegant figure reflected in his eyes, by then he found out that it was merely his own wishful thinking.

The unable to be controlled tears were in a flash pouring out on his face. Duan Shun Jie finally understood what was called as alive not as good as dying. Compared to whichever moment, he clearly understood the gap between them

was an obstacle that he wouldn't be able to surpass forever --- Xuan Yuan's status, the enmity between them.....

Also, there was this fact that Xuan Yuan had never loved him.

Sometimes ago, he also had stealthily slipped in Xuan Yuan's dwelling place, only that at that time because he wanted to assassinate him, as the result, in the end it turned to he promised to surrender to him --- although this only gave him an exchange for a short several months with Xuan Yuan peacefully got along, but each moment and every second of those times was his lifetime most beautiful memory. Even if brief, he was not in the least bit regret exchanging this short moment with all of his life.

But the him now, already didn't have the thing Xuan Yuan willing to use his time to exchange for. He had abandoned his own family origin, thoroughly brought shame and ruin upon himself, and after his arm became disabled, his only ability to help Xuan Yuan also lost. The him now was merely a not having anything at all disabled person, what else would he have to be traded with the high ranked Crown Prince Xuan Yuan's attention?

Allowing the cold wind to completely dry up his tears, Duan Shun Jie felt that his heart was as if having numerous dull knife slowly cut it to pieces. Already lost the count of how many times he told himself, already saw Xuan Yuan, he ought to give up and leave everything behind. But his body didn't listen to his order.

Didn't know how long had it passed, Xuan Yuan finally closed the very last petition, ordered the Palace's servant to lay the bed. Afterwards, the Palace's servant put out the majority of the light and retreated himself. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng raised his body, stretching his waist, unexpectedly said with low voice : "How long do you intend to daydream on the roof? Get down."

In an abrupt, he realized that deep down in his heart, he actually had a little expectation that Xuan Yuan would be aware of him. Duan Shun Jie was frightened by this lowly thought he actually harbour. But since he had completely given up all of his hopes, his attitude became optimistic. Without hesitating, he diligently used the greatest extent of his natural poise to leap into the room.

"I know that it is you!" Xuan Yuan's manner of speaking contained an unspeakable sarcastic remarks. "Duan Shun Jie, you just can't change to a new pattern, can you? Always secretly and quietly appears. You bored me to death, you know?"

Since earlier had been hurt to the point of numb, Duan Shun Jie realized he already could face Xuan Yuan's insult without losing his cool, completely without the least bit intention to fight back.

"Duan Shun Jie, I truly admire you! I should be your unable to live under the same sky enemy. You unexpectedly still could calmly appear in front of me, like nothing had happened, you use this kind of eyes to see me. Heaven, Duan Shun Jie, actually how low do you want to get before you satisfied?" Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was seemingly displeased by his indifferent, the topic of conversation was conducted with an excessive biting sarcasm.

Duan Shun Jie realized that he actually had the urge to laugh. If someone was spreading the story about he and Xuan Yuan, perhaps each and every of them would laugh to death by his ridiculously laughable act.

If it was the him in the past, indeed he wouldn't believe in this world there was actually someone who was willing to be degraded to such extent. But when everything befallen upon his head, he finally knew, in this world there was really exist someone who was most willing even if to lose everything still wanted to pursue his love.

Right, actually how low did he want to get before he satisfied?

He also wanted to ask himself the same question. He really didn't know how could he become like this. Being trampled by Xuan Yuan with such harsh words, yet he still unable to reduce even the slightest bit his love for him.

Duan Shun Jie understood, since long ago he already beyond cure. Life or death was of no matter anymore --- the

him who toward whatever wound had become numb was basically like a body without a soul. Had lost his relatives, career and love, he was like a boat without its sail and oar, already didn't have the strength to sail in this world of mortals' ocean of desire any longer. The yearning to see Xuan Yuan was his only remaining bit that he unwilling to dictate. Regarding the entanglement with Xuan Yuan, he had forfeited his rationality, and didn't want to use the rationality anymore. Because as long as he pondered over and again about each and every thing, he would be miserable to the utmost and just wished he could promptly die. The him now merely relied on his instinct to move, even if this instinct was about to lead him to enter the underworld, he already lost the strength to go back.

The him who was carrying this kind of affection why should he mind this little harmful words. Only that, this feeling, he didn't want to explain it to Xuan Yuan, also had no way to explain, Duan Shun Jie could only remain silent all along, blankly stood several steps in front of Xuan Yuan, gazing at him, it was as if he wanted to memorize more of his appearance.

Seeing Duan Shun Jie towards his insult was completely had no reaction, Xuan Yuan also seemed like rather uninterested. He was slightly amused, amusingly walked to sit on the side of the table. Lazily poured a cup of wine for himself.

"Alright, then you actually have what business with me, Duan Great General?"

"Can Can you let me hold your hand?" Duan Shun Jie all of sudden let the word escaped his mouth, soon after that, he was shocked by his own self.

Xuan Yuan was revealing an incomprehensible expression, the air in the room froze in that moment. Duan Shun Jie obviously had never thought himself that he actually could let this request out of his mouth. In an instant he was rooted on his spot.

Carrying this laughable great desire to come and see Xuan Yuan for the very last time then immediately left afterwards, from the beginning to the very end, he still wished to search and obtain a thread of tenderness from him in this place, it might be called as ridiculous and pitiful to the utmost.

Seeing the corner of Xuan Yuan's mouth slowly showed a line of cold laugh, Duan Shun Jie nearly wanted to turn his body to run away at once. So he didn't need to face his cruel word which would come next.

"Fine." Never had thought, Xuan Yuan's respond was beyond his expectation. "But I have one condition."

He raised his body, from the locked upper drawer on the cabinet, he fetched out a porcelain bottle. Pouring a little of the powder inside the bottle to the wine cup in front of him. Taking the cup of wine and put it in front of Duan Shun Jie, leisurely said : "This is called as the Chastity Powder. This is the inner Palace's secret drug. Particularly used by the Emperor when leaving the Palace for long time, given to the left behind Imperial Concubines to drink. Within half a month after drinking this drug, if having a sexual intercourse, then a sure death is beyond doubt. It is to ensure the Imperial Concubines undefiled chastity undistributed secret drug. As long as you drink this wine..... "Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng lifted the wine's cup to Duan Shun Jie's lips, the meaning wasn't need words to explain.

Facing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's deep to the point of immeasurable pair of eyes, Duan Shun Jie toward what he was thinking about was crystal clear. His heart in that moment became unusually calm, almost without any hesitation, he already took the cup from Xuan Yuan's hand and drank it all in one gulp.

Seeing him drank all the wine in the cup, a flash of hard to be described by words expression flitted across Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's pupils. Putting down the cup, he stretched his hand to hold Duan Shun Jie : "Let's go to the bed."

That warm hand astonishingly transmitted a thread of warmth for Duan Shun Jie, relieved and untied the all along pent-up agony in his chest. Duan Shun Jie exceptionally meekly followed him to go to the sleeping quarter by the next door. He himself wanted to let out three sound of laughter for this kind of funny relationship. But his heart's

extreme grief had made him couldn't make whatever kind of reaction.

Although not the slightest bit minded that he had swallowed down the poisonous wine, but no matter what, he had never figured out he would leave this mortal world in such a bizarre way. Never had thought in this life time he actually still had the opportunity to make love with Xuan Yuan, he absolutely had no clue whether he should cry or laugh at this very moment.

Being pushed to the spacious bed, seeing Xuan Yuan stretching his hand to untie the upper robe of his body, Duan Shun Jie was like reminded of something, using his hand to close his front garment.

"Upper robe.... Upper robe can it not be pulled off?" Even though diligently wanted to maintain his calmness, his eyes revealed the limitless flowing sorrow, it was as if this matter was extremely important for him.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng lightly smiled. The fingers changed to the sash knot on his waist. After pulling his knot, Duan Shun Jie's trousers altogether with his underwear were taken off quickly, exposing his half naked body.

Extremely meek allowing Xuan Yuan pulled apart his pair of legs, Duan Shun Jie wordlessly gazed at Xuan Yuan's nimble fingers skillfully stretched forward to enter his body. Diligently tried to restrain his excited mood, but he accidentally realized that his pleasure seemingly burning more fiercely compared to the former days.

A little dreadful that he surprisingly, under this kind of situation, towards Xuan Yuan's caress and fondle still could have such great reaction, Duan Shun Jie desperately tried to control himself, until later he could no longer be able to repress the uproaring tide of desire in his body, uncontrollably moaned while writhing.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng still with his as if smiling but not smiling expression, skilfully and easily moved his fingers in Duan Shun Jie's inner body with thrusting in and out motion. In low voice he whispered in Duan Shun Jie's ear : "Shun Jie, if I want you to forget all that happened in the past, and just like this stay by my side for the rest of your life, will you agree to do so?"

Duan Shun Jie's body because of this slightly trembling at once. A thread of anguish flitted across his pair of eyes --- be able to stay by Xuan Yuan's side was indeed his sweetest dream, however, this dream had no possible way to come true anymore.

Slowly shook his head, gradually, he couldn't control the surging pleasure in his body, his voice began to turn into a scattered and smashed speech : "No.... I won't..... You killed my father.....also..... also Si Qi..... I have no way to hate you, but..... We already no longer have the possibility..... ehk.....no longer have the possibility to be together...."

The reality indeed this lamentable. Put aside the fact that Xuan Yuan didn't love him, no matter if they were a harmonious couple, he already didn't have the standpoint to spend his life together with him. Duan Shun Jie knew he couldn't renounce this very last bottom line, to pretend that nothing had happened, with the enemy who killed his father and sister be happily live together for the rest of his life.

Maybe, unable to have Xuan Yuan's love was fortunate for him instead. If he could have his love, then forced to be separated, perhaps he would be in ten thousands fold more in agony than now --- the moment he was entered by Xuan Yuan's passionate hard and stiff lower body, Duan Shun Jie mind abruptly flashed through with this kind of thought.

The pain was overlapped with the hadn't experienced before surging pleasure. Duan Shun Jie's reasoning little by little turned to a mess. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng also seemed to be a little out of control, compared to his usual self, he was more feverish and hysterically plundering the male body under his own body.

"Slower..... Please be slower....." Duan Shun Jie seemed already unable to endure such intense pleasure, using his

on the verge of crying like voice to plead.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng as if didn't hear his pleading at all, still rammed his inner body to his heart content. At the moment when Duan Shun Jie thought the highest peak was imminent, Xuan Yuan all of a sudden extending his hand to pull apart his upper robe.

"No!" Duan Shun Jie let out a scream. Trying to use his left hand to cover his front chest, but hopelessly realized that Xuan Yuan's eyes shrank for a moment.

"No! Don't look! I beg you, don't look!" Tears were uncontrollably flowing out, inside his body, a burst of damp and hot feeling couldn't be ignored --- Xuan Yuan had ejaculated inside his body.

But he didn't seem to have the intention to take it out from Duan Shun Jie inner body at all, moreover, his expression became complicated, pulled Duan Shun Jie's hand to the side of his body, letting the mass of crisscross scars in front of his chest completely apparent under the candle light --- those were the scars stroke by dagger. The depth of the stroke almost sank in the flesh, deeper a little more, it could be harmful. The scars color and luster was of new ones and old ones, seemingly it was not created in just one time. The crisscross was extremely ugly, but the word character still could be clearly seen :

熙誠

Xi Cheng.

That, except for Duan Shun Jie himself, there was no way other people could carve that name on his body.

"Fool.... You are a fool..... Why do you have to be this stupid?" Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's expression was of Duan Shun Jie hadn't seen before, such baffled and confused. Talking to himself as if murmuring. Suddenly he turned Duan Shun Jie, forced him to look at him face to face.

"Duan Shun Jie. You properly look! I am a man, moreover, a do not love you man! Deceived your feeling and your body, killed your father and sister. Why like this you still carved my name on your body? Have you gone insane!"

Unable to directly face Xuan Yuan's intense admonition, Duan Shun Jie jerk in agony, trying to struggle free from his hand. What Xuan Yuan had said, how could he do not understand. But the days after he left, in the deep of the night, every time he called it to mind, he would be suffered to the point he couldn't sleep. That kind of pain as if only if he took out the dagger that he brought all along then with all his might stabbed it to his chest could be alleviated a little.

He himself also didn't know why he wanted to carve Xuan Yuan's name. Countless time he suspected that he must have gone insane. However, when he thought about Xuan Yuan and that seeping the bone pain and despair, they let him know, he was still in his right mind.

Those unable to recover wounds in that moment was exposed in front of Xuan Yuan. The bloody and ugly longing seemingly had stripped Duan Shun Jie from the very last bit of his self-esteem. His face turned to a ghastly pale, stiffened his body await for Xuan Yuan to say an even crueler insult.

"Fool.... You are a fool....."

But Xuan Yuan was unlike his usual saying an ear-piercing words, only muttering a line as if sighing. Following next, he bowed down his body to print his lips on his left nipple.

Sensing that wet and hot tongue deliberately tantalized him, also slowly wandered along with the crisscross strokes on his chest, Duan Shun Jie's lower body uncontrollably erected at once, at the same time also clearly felt Xuan Yuan's still inside his body manhood also became vigorous.

"Ahh....." Feeling Xuan Yuan's hand stroking his lower part, Duan Shun Jie almost lost his control and attained his climax at that moment, but blocked by those pair of nimble hands. The tender and delicate inner wall of his back could clearly feel Xuan Yuan began to move forward and backward, thrust in and pull out. The already moistened thoroughly inner body didn't suffer the dry and rough pain anymore. The friction of the penis seemingly had aroused that kind of undescrivable limp and numb along with pleasure inside his body, caused him to unable to restrain the moaning from escaping his mouth.

"Call me, Call my name! Quick!" Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng also seemed like even more excited than usual. Letting go the assault on the nipple, he exerted his strength on kissing Duan Shun Jie's lips. That hadn't done for a long while warm affection nearly caused Duan Shun Jie to suffocate. His tongue was strongly sucked by Xuan Yuan, he could feel the not swallowed saliva flowing down to his neck, but his hand was firmly held by Xuan Yuan so he had no way to wipe it clean.

"..... Xi Cheng, I love you!"

At long last, when Xuan Yuan let go of his lips, he struggled to say this line. The tears altogether spilled from his eyes to his cheek. This was the first time he cried in front of Xuan Yuan, but he didn't even care anymore --- he would die soon, and Xuan Yuan was his lifetime one and only person he ever loved, even if destined not to have the opportunity to stay together with him in this life time, but to use this sort of way to part with this world, he felt that he was extremely blessed.

"I know." Xuan Yuan answered with a deep voice, the voice was hoarse because of the desire. He started to exert his strength to add the pace of his galloping lower hip, deeper and stronger, he rammed on Duan Shun Jie, making him because of the unbearable pleasure unceasingly shuddered and moaned in his weep.

Immersing in the ultimate peak of mad lovemaking, the two actually completely didn't notice that there was someone approaching.

"My husband, the night is late, why haven't slept..... Heaven....." The dressing up in Palace's robe beauty with her caring smile pushed open the door of the sleeping quarter, but upon the sight of the utmost burning hot scene inside the room, she screamed with the top of her lungs.

The two whose eyes only remained their counterpart's muscle and skin were startled by the screaming voice. Xuan Yuan lifted his head, he still had the time to see the back of his wife, Wang Shi. Wanted to jump and chase her, he realized that he didn't even have half of thread on his body.....

End of Fallen Hero chapter 16.

PS : I will lessen the notes since it seems most of the idioms had been used before. (also, me too busy to make the note. LOL...)

Two more chapters guyssss.... FIGHTING!!
Hopefully I can finish it within this week. XD

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 17



luxiufer.livejournal.com/40453.html

Yet, another unproofed version.

The Fallen Hero Chapter 17



The matter very quick expanded to a get out of hand extent. Finding out the two's love affair, the Crown Prince's wife, Wang Shi, excessively shocked to the point without the least bit considering the consequence, she reported this matter to Feng Zong. The grave and utmost severe scandal in Datong's dynasty broke out to the open in a flash.

The Palace's servants of the Eastern Palace because of the scream were woken up and started to gather. All of the guards then changed to the dressing up in the uniform of the inner Palace's elite squad of bodyguards. The entire of Eastern Palace's lanterns were lit up. The people in the Palace all knew that something big happened in Eastern Palace, but didn't know what actually was the matter.

The Left and Right Prime Minister were urgently summoned to enter the Palace to discuss about this affair. Hurriedly freshened up and dressed neatly, the two who were led to the Crown Prince's sleeping quarter was shocked by the scenery on the site.

The clothes was a little messy, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, with a whole face deep and unmeasurable, was kneeling under the stair. Behind him was, with the arms tied behind the back and rope looped around the neck, previous Pingnan's surrendered General, Duan Shun Jie. Duan Shun Jie's hair was unfastened and hung down, clothes also the same messy to the extreme. In the Crown Prince's sleeping quarter, drifted through the air, the beyond word could describe ambiguous atmosphere.

"Beast! Beast! How do you explain to me, what actually is this about!" Feng Zong's face was ashen and cold. When he arrived at the Eastern Palace, the two had put on their clothes, but the thick scent of lovemaking in the air couldn't be concealed. The Doctor also had examined Duan Shun Jie's body, indeed there was the trace of having a sexual intercourse with a male. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng under this undeniable circumstances could only silently admit their secret relationship.

"Bastard!"

Although Datong's dynasty most renowned Emperor, Emperor Jing Zong*, also bestowed all his favor on a male, however, in Jing Zong's rear Palace, this matter was regarded as an important matter that must be kept secret, not a single person dared to mention about it. But now, the Palace unexpectedly burst out such scandal. Feng Zong even though intimidated by Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's power and influence within the court so that didn't dare to immediately declare to demote him from Crown Prince's position, instead, decided to dump all of his anger on Duan Shun Jie.

(t/n : * Emperor Jing Zong, yesh, they are mentioning MY JING... teehee... XD *me heart is fluttering for Jing made a cameo appearance in this story* wuahahahaha.... XD)

"Report, Your Majesty. This Duan Shun Jie, even if could be counted as had a heroic contribution for His Highness the Crown Prince, but as far as Your Subject knows, his real status is of the great traitor Ouyang Fa De's illegitimate son. Your Subject's suggestion, absolutely must not let off. But considering he also had contributed meritorious deed for our Datong, to bestow upon him his intact corpse is because of Our Emperor has a benevolent heart. As for His Highness the Crown Prince, Your Subject opinion is, he must be temporarily confused by the villain. Your Majesty could decree a seclusion to reflect on his past errors, lighten a punishment and see how the offender behaves."

Afraid that he would be pushed aside by the Left Prime Minister who had the aid of the Crown Prince's power, the Right Prime Minister when he was being asked how to deal with this matter by Feng Zong, certainly in thousand ways hundred plans* tried to attack Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng.

(t/n : * thousand ways, hundred plans (id) : by every possible means.)

"Then, Prime Minister Wang, what do you think?" Feng Zong obviously rather satisfied with Right Prime Minister's suggestion, yet he turned to ask the Left Prime Minister.

Left Prime Minister was the Crown Prince's wife's father. Of course wouldn't have a pity on Duan Shun Jie, also made a difficult decision to have an identical opinion with Right Prime Minister : "Your Subject's opinion exactly the same as the Right Prime Minister's suggestion."

Once this speech said, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's heart became cold at once. In regard to today's situation, it was already more than enough for Feng Zong to decide to execute Duan Shun Jie. Now the Right Prime Minister pulled out this fact about his status as Ouyang Fa De's son, he was afraid that today Duan Shun Jie already difficult to have a good luck.

"This is somewhat good." Feng Zong since earlier had decided, must eliminate Duan Shun Jie. After all, The Crown Prince's side was absolutely inappropriate to have this kind of man existence. "Grant Duan Shun Jie a bottle of Crane Head red wine. And will be buried with full honours."

Though since earlier had been in anticipation, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng still creased and twitched his brows. A flash of complicated expression swept pass his pair of pupils.

Feng Zong didn't overlook his expression, turned to look at his son, his expression was a little unfathomable. In his memory, this seventh son had never, for whatever matter whomever person, been moved. Before, when he requested him to hand over his conceiving a child concubine, Ouyang Si Qi, he also with his unchanging face agreed to it. Never had thought, the him who usually heartless, ruthless, infamous for his vicious method, would actually commit this kind of absurd mistake.

Just now, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng in private had admitted that his intimate secret relationship with Duan Shun Jie was a long-standing issue. The beginning was because of to get rid Pingnan, accepted Duan Shun Jie as a surrendered General. But when being asked further, why now, when the world had stable, Duan Shun Jie also didn't have any usable value anymore, why did he still in the Crown Prince's sleeping quarter, with him commit such an absurd affair, in addition, with Xuan Yuan's skill, actually engrossed to the point wasn't aware when Wang Shi appeared, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's answer was faltering, unable to clarify and speak out the whys and wherefores.

"Xi Cheng, you and General Duan have known each other for a while. This wine, just leave it to you to feed him." Considering this considering that, Feng Zong could deeply sense this Duan Shun Jie's position in Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's heart was absolutely not ordinary. If couldn't perfectly settle this matter, he was afraid that this could shake Datong's domination. Signaling the personal attendant to carry the wine to Xuan Yuan's side, he was indeed being tardy, unwilling to stretch his hand to take it.

Seeing Xuan Yuan unwilling to receive the order, Feng Zong creased his brows. In the end, he couldn't help but flare up. Looking for a way out from his awkward position, he said : "Since you are unwilling, then just leave it to the personal attendant to carry out the death sentence."

"Imperial Father, let me do it." Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng was seemingly had decided on whatever resolution, in an abrupt, he raised his body to stand up. Taking from the personal attendant's hand the cup filled with poisonous wine, slowly walked to Duan Shun Jie's side.

The two's eyes met. Staring at Xuan Yuan's complicated eyes, Duan Shun Jie was smiling instead --- even if only up

to this moment he just found out that Xuan Yuan's heart also could be confused because of him seemed like already too late, but could be able to know in his very last moment, at the time of bidding farewell, that he was not completely without regard for his feeling, already made him happy to the point even death he was not afraid the least bit.

"Don't forget that Chastity Powder...." Seeing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng being tardy and hadn't fed him the wine, Duan Shun Jie after being in a shock, couldn't help but remind him that he basically didn't have much time to live, now fed him to swallow down that poisonous wine also couldn't change the situation to an even worse situation.

He already didn't frighten by death. Could have his most beloved person to personally send him off was a form of happiness. Besides, by doing this, much or less he still could retrieve Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's dignity as a Crown Prince.

"Fool!" Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng whispered in annoyance. His expression was of a gleam of Duan Shun Jie never had seen before gentleness, caused him to be fascinated upon the sight. "You fool, how can you just believe in everything? In this world, there wasn't such a Chastity Powder. That not more than an ordinary aphrodisiac!"

Duan Shun Jie blanked in an instant. Thinking back, the just now under his body letting loose all of his restrain appearance, couldn't help but his face turned to red, he said inwardly, no wonder, just now he had become so sensitive.

"Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, what are you doing!" The two's ambiguous behaviour made Feng Zong's anger burn to its boiling point at once. He furiously glared at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, didn't dare to believe this whispering gently man was actually that usually infamous for his cruelty, the Cruel Prince.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng as if, instead of this, had made up his mind. His hand was slanted, unexpectedly pouring that fully filled poisonous wine, spilling all of it on the floor. In an instant, all was in an uproar.

Feng Zong's eyes nearly jumped out, unable to believe this was the same with that unchanging expression came to him and promised to hand over Ouyang Fa De's daughter seventh son --- for information, that Ouyang Si Qi at that time was conceiving his flesh and blood. Had no way to believe this kind of him actually could commit such foolish act.

"Imperial Father, Duan Shun Jie is Your Subject Son's saviour, also had a heroic contribution for our Datong. Your Subject Son earnestly requests Imperial Father for having mercy on him, not to execute him." Spilled off the poisonous wine, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng as if in that moment regained the coldness and calmness of the Cruel Prince. His speech thoroughly with the firm determination.

"Xi Cheng, you....." Duan Shun Jie didn't dare to believe his own ears for hearing that words. He looked at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng in disbelief, trying to prevent him from continuing saying the words he would regret afterwards.

"If I insist on killing him?" Feng Zong seemingly also the same couldn't believe that actually would hear his son plead for someone else. Even more definite that Duan Shun Jie was a harmful being. Secretly decided that toward this matter he absolutely couldn't be softhearted.

"Earnestly request Imperial Father for having mercy on him, not to execute him." Kneeling in front of Feng Zong, knocking his head, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng knew he most probably was doing the most foolish thing in his whole life. But a stream of beyond words could describe impulse was supporting him not to let Duan Shun Jie died just like this.

Agitated by Xuan Yuan's different from usual behaviour, Feng Zong in an instant changed his face color. With a loud voice ordered a decree : "All the Imperial Bodyguards listen to the decree. Fight and kill Duan Shun Jie, will be prettily rewarded."

A large quantities of Imperial Guards very quick arrived, surrounding Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng and on his back Duan Shun Jie to the point of not even a drop of water could trickle through*. Only out of consideration for his status as Crown Prince they didn't dare to advance.

(t/n : * not even a drop of water could trickle through (id) : impenetrable.)

"Imperial Father!" Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's voice all the more serene, it was like carrying out the very last earnest request.

"Get up! Holding up an execution, according to laws and decrees, to be beheaded immediately!" Feng Zong couldn't stand it, the all along displaying an overlord style beloved son could defy him because of a man, the tone became not the least bit lenient, in a stern voice he shouted an order.

Could see that Feng Zong had truly furious, the Imperial Bodyguards also didn't dare to take it lightly. One after another they pulled out their weaponries, together charged toward Duan Shun Jie's direction.

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng knitted his brows. Very fast raised to stand up, also didn't know how he moved, already holding a long sword in his hand which he took by force. Cutting off the rope on Duan Shun Jie's body, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng shielded him behind his body. He himself took care of forcing the Imperial Bodyguards to retreat.

Watching him actually made a move, Feng Zong's anger became even more uncontrollably : "Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, if you don't stop and hand over Duan Shun Jie, this Datong Imperial Family from now on will not have such disobedient and unfilial son like you!"

"Your Majesty!" All along watching in a daze Wang Shi was shocked and crying out loud. Seeing Feng Zong not the least bit moved his countenance, she could only turn to plead Xuan Yuan, "My husband, I beg you! Even if you don't regard the feeling between father and son, not regard you and me as husband and wife, at least consider about your children...."

Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng only creased his brows, his hands' movement didn't stop at all. His martial arts skill was much more superior than the Imperial Bodyguards, adding more none of the Imperial Bodyguards dared to hurt or kill him, only in a count of minutes there was no one who able to get near to him.

Staring at the desperately protected him while moving towards the outer side of the Palace Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, Duan Shun Jie's feeling could be said as complicated to the utmost point. He didn't dare to believe that heartless and unfeeling Xuan Yuan actually could do such universally shocking action for his sake. His touched heart was hard to describe. He unstoppably suspected himself, whether or not he was dreaming, to the point he used his left hand to pinch his own thigh, but couldn't stand the pain so he let out a groaning sound.

"What are you doing?" Seeing Duan Shun Jie's peculiar action, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng wrinkled his brows, handing over the long sword in his hand to him, "Take this!"

Duan Shun Jie received the sword. Although using the left hand, compared to using the right hand, the reaction was slower a great deal, but after all he was among the few experts of the present era. Combined with Xuan Yuan's move, in an flash, the surrounded the two, large amount of Imperial Bodyguards, were repelled to several Zhang.

Now it had come to this point, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng also knew, in front of Feng Zong he already had no way back. What strange was his heart was not containing resentment, instead, there was a sort of heartily content feeling as well as calmness, as if he could experience Duan Shun Jie's frame of mind on that day, when he would rather give up everything to follow him.

Could see that there was no one who could block him, he waved his long sword, holding Duan Shun Jie's hand, he soared up high in the sky then left. Only a several rose and fell, they already went far away.

Feng Zong was furious to the point of shivering from head to toe. After quite a while had passed, by then he voiced out his order : “I decree, The Crown Prince, being disobedient and unfilial, has abandoned the Eastern Palace, thus demote to be a plebeian.”

“Why do you do this?”

Following behind Xuan Yuan to the direction of Tong'an City's outer part, dashing towards it, Duan Shun Jie no matter how still couldn't comprehend everything that just now happened in Eastern Palace. With Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng's behaviour and style, he did not by every means shove the fault on himself was already could be said as mercy, for his sake took action and defied his Imperial Father was absolutely unlikely him to handle a matter. Duan Shun Jie no matter what didn't dare to come to a conclusion of because he had an affection feeling towards himself. However, the uncertainty in his mind, indeed couldn't be unknotted no matter how.

A thread of awkwardness flashed through Xuan Yuan's face. The today him, seemingly had an even intriguing expression than the usual him, caused Duan Shun Jie nearly couldn't recognize the person in front of him.

“Don't ask! What if I keep asking you, why do you want to carve my name on your body?” Being gazed by Duan Shun Jie's enquiring eyes until he was slightly annoyed, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng sarcastically replied to him.

Duan Shun Jie was surprised, soon after that came to a realization. Could it be that Xuan Yuan actually meant..... actually meant.....

Stopping his foot steps, he gazed at Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng in disbelief, “Xi Cheng, are you saying.....”

Seeing the sparkling and translucent water floating on his eyes, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng couldn't help but be flustered. Stopping his foot steps and walked to Duan Shun Jie's side, he pulled him to a hidden alley by the road side and pressed him to the wall. Slowly but surely printed his lips on him.

“I am sorry.....” Between the extremely intimate interlinking of lips and teeth, Duan Shun Jie as if hearing Xuan Yuan unclearly whispering something between his teeth. In the transient darkness before daybreak, the two, in a secluded corner inside the city, unrestrainedly kissing each other, completely forgot that a large amount of Palace Guards were all over the city to hunt and arrest the two.

Until they almost suffocate from lacking of air, by then they finally parted themselves. Never had crossed his mind, the originally thought as an extravagant wish in a dream could actually come true in reality, the corner of Duan Shun Jie's lips couldn't control a thread of gentle smile from slowly floating up, but caught off guard by Xuan Yuan's hard pinch on his palm.

“What's with the stupid smile! Let's quickly go!”

Before his eyes already the wall of Tong'an City. Xuan Yuan knew, once he stepped out of Tong'an City, he was no longer Datong's Crown Prince anymore. The several years ago, to strive for this supreme position he invested all of his effort, in a flash had been wasted like the flowing water. But his heart was of such peacefulness and delight, never had thought he actually could calmly put down his stubborn attachment for power and position.

Swift as the wind quick as the lightning, the two already leaped over the city's wall. At this time, the sky already slightly bright. Under the light of the rising sun, the two who hadn't slept for a whole night were wearing a tired out and exhausted face, but the tip of their brows, the outer corner of their eyes, was having this sort of beyond words could explain kind of relax, it might be happiness but might also be satisfaction.

“Where are we going to?”

Everything was so beautiful like it was a dream. Duan Shun Jie truly afraid that he would suddenly wake up and realize each and every was merely his own wish. Following behind Xuan Yuan walked along the road, he finally couldn't restrain himself from asking.

"Don't ask anymore. Just go with me." Seemed like had recovered from his former awkwardness, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng returned to become that strong to the utmost point man. Pulling Duan Shun Jie to continuously dash on the field.

Travelling for more than an hour, The Duan Shun Jie had come before, Xuan Yuan's other's house by the outskirt of the City, already within sight. This was Xuan Yuan's secret property, Feng Zong also didn't know at all, that's why hadn't sent the guards to search this place.

Fetching some clothings and valuables from his other residence, as well as ordering the servant to prepare two fine steeds, Xuan Yuan changed his Imperial robe with the commoner confucian attire, but even though donned in simple attire, it still couldn't conceal his unworldly noble disposition.

Smiled and looked attentively at Duan Shun Jie, Xuan Yuan helped him to ride on a horse then he himself flipped over to the other horse's back. The bright and clear voice loudly shouted : "Let's go! Duan Shun Jie, come together with me to venture out into the world!"

Feng Zong's sudden act on discarding the Crown Prince initiated an uproar in the court. Knowing what had happened, all without exception uttered a sigh, felt that no matter what, this matter was unlike the always scheming, reserved, infamous Seventh Prince way of doing. The dumped Wang Shi and the other Concubines were crying all day long, a very noisy uproar.

However, Feng Zong dispatched his men to search for several months, Xuan Yuan and Duan Shun Jie were as if had evaporated from the world of mortal, disappeared without the slightest trace. Feng Zong finally believed that his always took great importance of power and influence son really had thrown down the readily available position as the world number one person and had left. The in despair him, after three months, conferred the Second Prince Zhong Cheng as the Crown Prince. Then made a statement that the former Crown Prince, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, had passed away during the banishment. Considered that as to write down an ending for the scandal of the Imperial Dynasty.

And after another several months had passed, Ouyang Si Qi's left behind baby all of a sudden disappeared from the previous Manor of the Seventh Prince. The didn't even have the time to take care of their own sorrow Wang Shi and the others, though had searched for everywhere, but all and all, since earlier they had been both mentally and physically exhausted, after searching for several days not even got the vaguest of news, they just gave it up.

In Mount Panlong, an already neglected for very long time residential suddenly became bustling. Didn't know from what place coming from, a family had moved in to that house. The brought along a large amount of attendants, in no time had fixed and rebuilt the house, completely renovated and decorated as good as new, the dignified and neatly arranged residence had made the family acknowledged as the region most prosperous family. The busybody who went to make an inquiry said, the owner was of surname Yan, coming from other place and just recently moved in.

This so-called Yan Master of course was the several months ago revolted and left Tong'an, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. He always had his own calculation. Long ago, when he was still with the status of the Seventh Prince, he had been establishing his own power and influence within Jianghu. Previously, succesfully defeated Jiang Rong also because he had the aid of this influence. Now that he had taken off his Crown Prince status, he just held on to his firstly established foundation, the property he had accumulated over a long time, and as it should be by rights, became the local Landlord among the commoners.

Losing the Crown Prince mighty status, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng realized that he was not at all sad like he had imagined. Instead, the life without the need to be abided by the Palace's elaborate laws and formalities had given him a hadn't experienced fresh feeling. Everyday only needed to travel from one scenic spots to another to his heart content, freely and easily spent the accumulated money was more satisfying.

Never dared to extravagantly wish for the days he could be with Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng everyday rested and flew together* would become reality, Duan Shun Jie needed a very long time before finally could believe that he actually was blessed with such good fortune.

(t/n : * To rest and fly together (id) : to be inseparable.)

At first, he wanted to use his own pair of hands to make his beloved person gained the happiness, but Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng obviously formidable to the point he didn't need him to worry over this trouble. He had lost the Crown Prince mighty position, yet his secretly collected wealth was more than enough for their lifetime living.

And if asked Duan Shun Jie, what was his only regret for now, most likely was completely needless to worry about their living. Had completely turned into a remarkable disgraceful rice insect.

End of Fallen Hero chapter 17.

Yahooo... Only epilogue left. XD

Fallen Hero Translation Chapter 18 - Epilogue



luxiufer.livejournal.com/41055.html

Warning : Prepare tissue please..... (Un PR version)

The Fallen Hero Chapter 18 – Epilogue.

“Remember? Looks like our first meeting was in one of summer night?”



Under the starry sky, summer night in the mountain was not hot and dry at all. From time to time, the blowing cold wind would blow away the day time pent up summer heat, causing the air filled with the cozy and gentle scent.

With his all happy and content gesture, soaking in the hot spring, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng leisurely strike up a conversation with Duan Shun Jie who was by his side.

“That’s right. I thought you were a girl.” Displaying a gentle and mild expression because of recalling one sweet memory, the aura of despair which once occupying Duan Shun Jie seemed as if had scattered and disappeared completely. The him now had returned to that first time seeing Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng’s bright and cheerful man, limpid and clear eyes made his ordinary countenance appeared to be sincere and moving one’s heart.

Together with Xuan Yuan living in Mount Panlong was already more than a year. The two had been accustomed to this having each other as company way of living. In their free time, they often left the mountain to travel to every places, and when returned to Mount Panlong, they didn’t forget to come to this hot spring, together enjoying their private happy times.

The him from one year ago could never imagine that he and Xuan Yuan actually could be together like this. That kind of even in the dream he knew it would never become true sweetness was really truly indeed surely happened in reality, he felt that himself, because of this awfully heavy happiness, had been pressed to the point he almost couldn’t endure it. And yet, Xuan Yuan seemed to be by Heaven’s law and Earth’s principle* doting on him, as if he wanted to compensate for the heartless things he had done.

(t/n : * by Heaven’s law and Earth’s principle (id) : as matter of course, perfectly justified.)

“If one year before, someone told me I still have the chance to be with you, I definitely would not believe.” Walking to Xuan Yuan’s side, using the well practiced gesture started to help him wash his long hair, Duan Shun Jie continued with the idle chat.

“You at that time, didn’t you hate me to death?” Xuan Yuan’s expression was of beyond words could describe gentleness. If not because his exceptionally unworldly beautiful visage hadn’t changed at all, whomever also couldn’t imagine this a whole face of a household man could be that commanding the winds and clouds* Cruel Prince.

(t/n : * commanding the winds and clouds (id) : shaking the whole world, all powerful.)

Duan Shun Jie lightly shook his head : “No. That time, every time I thought about you, my heart would be very much throbbing in pain, but when you actually appeared in front of me, I also felt an unspeakable delight. Although understood that I shouldn’t love you any longer, but I also couldn’t restrain myself.....”

Compared to the present, ever in a bitter relationship struggled to the point hardly propped himself up, that how suffering he was, even so, the love in his heart at that time had never dimmed even the faintest, supporting him to

persist until the very end.

“In fact, I still couldn’t understand why did you want to help me in the end?” Softly heaved a sigh, Duan Shun Jie began to wipe dry Xuan Yuan’s wet hair. “Honestly speaking, until today I still felt that this all is unreal. You before towards me was so....” Curled his lips, Duan Shun Jie in the end didn’t let the “heartless” word out of his mouth. He knew Xuan Yuan extremely detested him discussing about his way state of mind at that time, but always having a hidden insecurity caused him wanted to know, what exactly that made Xuan Yuan at that time without hesitation decided to protect him even if he had to defy Feng Zong.

Truthfully, Duan Shun Jie within this one year for countless times had been wanting to talk to Xuan Yuan about this matter, but each time, he was being looked at left and right and then talked of other things* by him. Being asked again by Duan Shun Jie, stating clearly this matter in front of him, a thread of peculiar awkwardness again emerged on Xuan Yuan’s face.

(t/n : * Looked at left and right and then talked of other things (id) : trying to evade a question by changing the subject.)

The matter regarding affection, it could not at all occur in a one morning and one evening*. Maybe, towards Duan Shun Jie, since earlier, when the two met for the very first time, the moment when he wanted to tease him, the root of the unknown feeling had been planted. And the situation afterwards gave this feeling an even more turning point to develop and to be used as an excuse. To put it bluntly, when he half forcefully, half seductively induced Duan Shun Jie to surrender*, his motive was already impure. At Sudu City, he had saved him and during the time they were in the mountain cave for several days made this affection overflowed even more to the point he himself had no choice but to face it up head on.

(t/n : * one morning and one evening (id) : over night, in a short period of time. * he was referring to chapter ten, when he half threatening half asking Duan Shun Jie to join Datong.)

Maybe afraid that he would really come to love this mediocre man, his attitude towards him turned into an unusual cruelty. Initially thinking of let him stay by his side while he steadily took time to clarify his feeling, but the jealousy, when he saw him even if had to sacrifice himself he still wanted to protect Ouyang Si Qi, had burnt down his rationality. Nearly with his own hands exterminated the first bud of little love sprout between the two.

At first, when he found out Duan Shun Jie had escaped, Xuan Yuan had admonished himself that he should let go, forget about him. But he still hadn’t given up Duan Shun Jie unexpectedly wearing that same melancholy face wanted to see him again. Probably only at that moment he finally let himself confirm that in his heart, towards this man, indeed existed a little and not the same from other kind of affection. The answer became all too clear during that time infinite pleasant lovemaking.

However, barely confirmed his own feeling, he had to face Feng Zong’s decree on Duan Shun Jie’s execution. With his ability and wisdom, he originally could perfectly retain both the Crown Prince position and Duan Shun Jie’s life, but the panic-stricken him, to his own surprise, lost his cool to the point lift up the sword to dispute with his Imperial Father, thoroughly abandoned the power and influence he had possessed, thrown them down by his own hands.

Although couldn’t accomplish his desire to be the Supreme Ruler under the Heaven indeed couldn’t be said as not having a slight regret, but the contented days like these days was not bad at all. Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn’t have the intention at all to chase back everything he had given up. Even if with his own influence within Jianghu, re-establishing a Kingdom for himself was not impossible at all, but the present him had understood what was most appropriate to be pursued in this life, thus he didn’t consider to pursue those vague and entirely unreal position, power and influence any longer.

These sorts feeling was during the life together with Duan Shun Jie in this one year he finally slowly clarified, but Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn’t have the slightest intention to tell Duan Shun Jie.

Just let that fool to make a wild guess wild thought by himself, the more he thought the more he was in a mess would be good --- a line of evil smile slowly floated up on the corner of Xuan Yuan's mouth, little by little changed into the classic expression which belonged to the Cruel Prince.

Seeing Xuan Yuan revealing that wicked evil expression, Duan Shun Jie certainly knew he mustn't think it was possible to hear whatever proper answer from his mouth. But he didn't care at all. After all, with Xuan Yuan's disposition, willing to freely and leisurely accompany him to pass the days was already more than enough to clearly explain the matter.

Had an affection, not at all must be announced out loud, right?

"Do you know, recently you seem to put on weight?" Feeling that he had enough soaking, Duan Shun Jie turned his body to prepare to climb the shore and put on clothes, then realized Xuan Yuan was using the finding new continent kind of eyes to stare at his waist, afterwards stating a line of observations that could make his chest extremely in pain.

That's right, having his heart's dearest person to accompany by his side, everyday only needed to eat drink play to heart content, this kind of him how could not be fat? These two days, when soaking in the hot spring, from the water he saw his own reflection, seemingly his cheeks had become very plump and smooth-skinned. He couldn't help but jealously glance and look at Xuan Yuan's figure which remained the same solid, sturdy and tall, every part just perfect. Duan Shun Jie honestly couldn't stand, why must he be richly endowed by nature so much.

"That's right. Every day no need to worry, no need to do anything. Only eat and drink. I roughly almost come the same size as Old man Sai Meng Chang." Sai Meng Chang was one of Xuan Yuan's subordinate, one of Senior General. The figure was six feet tall but the waist measurement was more than three feet. Looked from afar, it would like a mountain of meat.

Almost by Duan Shun Jie's dejected tone amused to burst out a laughter, Xuan Yuan diligently restrained himself, making his voice sounded extremely solemn : "Shun Jie, do you know? Even though your face is ordinary, but the waist was rather slender and the buttocks was rather stick up, it is very cute. If you kept on gaining weight, I am afraid that I could not help but want to have the red apricot tree leans over the garden's wall*....."

(t/n : * The red apricot tree leans over the garden's wall (id) : a wife having an illicit lover.)

"You....." Being talked about his what waist what buttocks until his face lost control in embarrassment, Duan Shun Jie tried his best to ignore the embarrassment. Both his arm were propping up him to the shore edge, half kneeling on the sandy land of the shore, intending to leave, yet he was embraced from behind by Xuan Yuan.

"Do you want me to help you to lose weight or not?" Xuan Yuan smilingly used his hands to lightly stroke on Duan Shun Jie's buttocks, accidentally sensed that his body became rigid, "Don't you know, doing a sexual intercourse under a high temperature will consume very much physical strength, like in this hot spring..... do it for several times, definitely will lose weight....." Slowly led his fingers to explore on his lower body, Xuan Yuan couldn't help but because of the feeling of flirting in an outdoor had a hidden pleasure.

"Go to hell!" Slightly couldn't stand Xuan Yuan's trick in which could lead whatever subject to the sexual matter, yet, honestly speaking, his since earlier had been accustomed to be doted on body, being attacked from the front and rear simultaneously, caused him hard to keep his cool, could only maintain his a little ambiguous posture.

Seeing him like this, Xuan Yuan became even more vigorous. Simply used the same posture as Duan Shun Jie, propping his hand on the shore, taking the lower part erection directly nestled closely to Duan Shun Jie's buttock.

"What the hell are you doing! It could be seen by others!" Didn't know whether he should be embarrass or angry, under this posture, when the tip of his manhood was being wrapped by Xuan Yuan's hand, seemingly struggling

would only turn into provocation, Duan Shun Jie slightly embarrassed while writhing his body in attempt to break free.

He could hear the Xuan Yuan on his back seemed to be drawing in a mouthful of cold air --- he actually only wanted to tease Duan Shun Jie, but the more he did it, indeed, it was like he really had aroused the flaming desire within his body, it had become adventurous and uncontrollable.

“No way. Without my order, they will block the insignificant people....” The ‘they’ of course referred to the guards of Mount Panlong’s Manor. Honestly speaking, Duan Shun Jie also couldn’t figure these men where exactly Xuan Yuan found them. Each and every of their skill could raise them to the list of Jianghu high-ranked martial artists expert. Yet, willingly to be Xuan Yuan’s subordinates became a small time bodyguard. When he asked him, Xuan Yuan only said from the former trusted subordinates. Seeing him didn’t have the intention to talk further, Duan Shun Jie also didn’t want to pursue on the matter.

Since there was a group of high-skilled martial artist skimming the area for them, undoubtedly there wouldn’t be the possibilities of being seen by other people. But all in all, the teaching he received since he was small didn’t allow him to be embraced by a male in the outdoor. No matter how, there was a barrier existed in his heart.

Duan Shun Jie although in difficulties, Xuan Yuan completely didn’t have the intention to be courteous. The two when bathing initially only wore their trousers and underwear. The drenched trousers nearly unable to hide anything. Xuan Yuan lightly kneaded for two times already could undo Duan Shun Jie’s waist knot. Lightly and easily lifted his clothing and took them off until his knee.

“Don’t be like this.... it is very unsightly....” Maintaining his bend over in a kneeling posture, the naked butt and the stick up buttocks appearance made Duan Shun Jie embarrassed to the utmost. But Xuan Yuan’s long and slender fingers had used the proficient and indecent gesture beginning to move back and forth on his buttocks. That kind of moment when the pleasure was ignited nearly made Duan Shun Jie unable to speak orderly.

“To do something once in a while, you just let me do it....” Xuan Yuan became more versed in handling Duan Shun Jie, knowing once he started to act coquettishly he would become helpless.

“This.... Ai ya. What on earth are you doing? It’s dirty! You....” Xuan Yuan was bending his body, began to use his mouth to moisten his narrow hole between the pair of mound, from time to time using his tongue to explore, entering the center of the chrysanthemum bud, licking and stirring. That both hot and wet feeling made him couldn’t control the area around his waist to slightly quiver, the lower body also couldn’t refrain from firmly erected.

Xuan Yuan had never done this kind of foreplay for him before, but at this moment, on the outdoor..... he truthfully was being too reckless.....

Sensing the very well-known limp and numb feeling began to rise from the lower abdomen, Duan Shun Jie himself knew it was impossible to turn around on Xuan Yuan, might as well just stop the struggle, began to allow him as his please to employ his hand up and down on him.

The nimble fingers continuously on Duan Shun Jie’s already firm and upright erected lower body made a rubbing movement. He could see the gradually swollen tip began to overflow with transparent juice. The two breathing sound also became louder and heavier. In this world seemingly only remained the two of them, since long ago had absolutely forgotten that they were having the sky as tent and earth as mat as they made love.

Could no longer endure it, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng put his firm and upright lower hip on Duan Shun Jie’s back entrance. Yet didn’t immediately thrust in, instead, subtly beat on the ring of the entrance, letting the overflow fluid from that bell like entrance tainted Duan Shun Jie’s bud to the point of both wet and sticky.

His face already red to the point couldn’t be even redder anymore. Duan Shun Jie himself could feel the certain part

of his inner body skin and muscle was unceasingly contracting and twitching, as if calling out for Xuan Yuan to enter and ravage it. He almost opened his mouth to beg him to stop this kind of sweet torment, but the last shred of remaining self-esteem prevented him from saying out such shameful words, could only helplessly gasp and pant while waiting for Xuan Yuan to enter.

Finally, from the back yard transmitted a beyond words could explain kind of swelling, aching, numbing and limping feeling. After a period of loosening and tantalizing, Xuan Yuan finally took his already unable to wait desire to thrust in his inner body. That leisurely slow in entering caused Duan Shun Jie nearly could feel the rubbing detail of blazing hot flesh and each crease of his inner body, could feel how Xuan Yuan inch by inch arrived to the deepest part of his body.

Completely burying himself in Duan Shun Jie's inner body, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng not at all impatient to use great force to thrust in and out. Instead, his pair of hands were supporting his buttocks, using the smallest extent to continuously moved the tip forward, as if intending to take his tip to enter deeper into his body to unstoppably reach his sensitive intestines. Until he heard Duan Shun Jie couldn't bear it any longer and starting to groan, until then he just slowly increased the sliding in and out pace. The friction brought along an intense pleasure nearly caused Duan Shun Jie to lose his soul because of it.

After ejaculating his essence for one time, Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng didn't at all have the consideration to change the battlefield. The outdoor sexual intercourse seemingly could arouse him even more. After taking out his manhood, in a quick speed he had turned the all over languid Duan Shun Jie to a facing him face to face posture, and then lifted his pair of legs and one more time entered his body.

"Shun Jie, do you know? Your inside is very hot! Did I make you feel very comfortable or not! How is it, isn't it very wonderful?!" Looking at Duan Shun Jie tightly closed his eyes with the whole face flushed red, Xuan Yuan's heart was like a surging wave, completely forgotten that he was older than himself, began to consider himself as the older lover.

Because still bashful and didn't dare to see Xuan Yuan's face when he was galloping on his body, Duan Shun Jie helplessly ignored Xuan Yuan's loud teasing words. The shyness as if prompting the dose of lewdness causing his body to become even more sensitive. The nipples which had been kneaded by Xuan Yuan, the lower abdomen, these sensitive places were scalding hot to a shocking extent.

Accompanied by a low grumbling voice, Xuan Yuan again released a great mass of his bodily fluid into Duan Shun Jie's body. That both hot and sticky feeling, truthfully not comfortable at all, but Duan Shun Jie was unable to overlook this kind of extremely intimate feeling, it was as if he and Xuan Yuan was connected become one body at that moment. I am inside you, you are inside me. This kind of overly sentimental to the point of couldn't be dissolved feeling of happiness was something he had never experienced before.

The two people at this moment, whole body was on the sandy land beside the pond, although Xuan Yuan's outer robe was under their body as their mat but still couldn't avoid the whole body stained by sand and soil. The stick by grain of sand body was being kneaded, rubbed and fondled. The subtle pain indeed aroused the eroticism from their inner body, causing the two because of this unable to be explained impulse slightly trembling.

Like this, got entangled in the moving back and forth intercourse, the two totally satisfyingly intertwined for four, five times before finally beat the gong to recall the troops*. Xuan Yuan had always been luxuriant in vigour, he still could sustain himself, Duan Shun Jie indeed already bewildered in a daze. Xuan Yuan helped him to slowly walk on the path before simply carried him on his back, just like that, step by step walk back to not so far away from the hot spring the Manor of Mount Panlong.

(t/n : * to beat the gong to recall the troops (id) : call off a battle, to order a retreat. --- I think the author was trying to make a funny remark here since both of them are warlord. LOL... XD)

The next day, Xuan Yuan since morning had left the Manor with Sai Meng Chang who came to ask for help. Duan Shun Jie also had his rare chance to snatch a long leisure time. He was thinking about strolling all around the mountain and regarded it as passing time amusement.

Randomly took a stroll, without any awareness he had walked to the hot spring's pond side out of habit. All by himself taking a stroll at the last night fantastic shore, Duan Shun Jie's heart was timid and delighted at the same time. In the end, with his flush red face he walked on the pond's side little path to the mountain forest.

This mountain path though he knew about it, indeed he didn't walk on it much. Once he walked on the path, the terrain gradually got higher. Along the path, the trees were luxuriantly green, the flowers were plentiful. Surprisingly, it was such a beautiful scenery. Thinking, tomorrow must take Xuan Yuan here to also have a look, but he was jumped out of surprise by the figure that suddenly appeared before his eyes.

"Greeting, Lord Duan." Focusing his eyes to see, it was actually one of the Manor's guards, Master* Qin.

(t/n : * Master 師傅 (shifu) – A respectful form to address a skilled worker or older men.)

"Master Qin, how can you also be here?" Nodding with a contained smile while greeted back, Duan Shun Jie astonishingly realized Master Qin's eyes slightly shifted, seemed like he found it embarrassing to look straight at him.

While he was puzzled, he heard Master Qin's reply : "Report Lord Duan, this part is a high terrain, this is a hidden standing place. Day and night always have someone to stand on guard."

Duan Shun Jie heard him said that, instantaneously had an ominous premonition, busily turned his body to see the direction on his back. Upon the sight, in an instant he was shocked to the point almost fainted --- this terrain was the best spot, could extremely clearly see the pond under it. Mentally connected last night was brightly lit by moonlight and this Master Qin's evading eyes.....

Inwardly saying no good in secret, his voice was inevitably had a slight quiver : "Last night here....."

Master Qin's dark face as if also became red, a little bit awkward he explained : "Master Fu was in charge of keep watch. This morning when changing shift, he mentioned about last night seeing the two Lords" Speaking to the last sentence, his voice gradually became lighter, most probably because he was frightened by Duan Shun Jie's face rapid change of color from red to green.

Cursing inwardly the clearly had known up there someone was keeping guard but still forced him to have a sexual intercourse in an open air with him Xuan Yuan for two tens of thousand times, Duan Shun Jie didn't have whatever mood to go on a scenic tour anymore. Unable to imagine the relation between him and Xuan Yuan inside the Manor had been spread into what, at the very least, he had lost his courage to continue the chat with Master Qin.

Almost like running away, he hurriedly asked to be excused from Master Qin. Staggering and swaying on his way down the mountain. Half way, Duan Shun Jie finally unable to hold it in any longer, with all his might he punched the tree by his side : "Damn you Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng! When you return, I definitely will teach you a lesson!!"

Even if wholeheartedly wanted to seek out Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng to settle a score, however, the servant who was in charge of taking care of Su'r came to report, the child suddenly raised a high temperature. Duan Shun Jie made haste to go. Even had asked a doctor to examine the sickness, Su'r's fever was not decreased. It made him to suddenly feel all of his six vital organs had failed*.

(t/n : * all six vital organs fail (id) : at a loss what to do.)

Su'r was Xuan Yuan and Ouyang Si Qi's daughter. Full name was Yan Su Qi. At beginning, Xuan Yuan violently opposed to take her with them, but Duan Shun Jie no matter how was still unable to abandon this motherless child.

The result of his persistence was Xuan Yuan stepped back, dispatched someone to fetch Su'r from Tong'an and take her to Mount Panlong's Manor.

Towards this pitiful child, Duan Shun Jie always had a sense of unspeakable guilty conscience. If there wasn't him and Xuan Yuan's encounter, she wouldn't be born into this world and be suffered. However, if there wasn't him and Xuan Yuan's encounter, the him now wouldn't be able to experience such happiness.

Because of his excessive happiness generated a twinge of guilt, Duan Shun Jie turned it into innumerable doting for Su'r. Although only his niece, Duan Shun Jie loved her even more than her own father.

"Lord Duan, Lord Yan has returned." As a martial arts practitioner, the having only a little medical knowledge Duan Shun Jie could see that Su'r's illness was not as simple as the common cold. Exactly at the moment when he was utterly helpless, hearing that Xuan Yuan had returned, of course he would be pleased beyond expectations.

"How is it actually?" The still wearing going out robe Xuan Yuan appeared on the door way, obviously, once he got home he rushed to come here.

"Su'r is having a high fever. Already ate the medicine from the doctor, yet don't seem any better. Now her consciousness also become unclear." Duan Shun Jie busily reported to him, led him to the side of the child's bed.

Xuan Yuan looked at the child's crimson red face, twitched his brows, then stretched his hand to check Su'r's pulse, also checked on her eyelids. Walking to the table and took a brushing pen to write a prescription then give it to the servant, "Go to the town under the mountain and get medicine in accordance with this prescription."

"Can or can not?" Despite knowing that under the heaven there was nothing could be a problem for Xuan Yuan, but never had known that he unexpectedly also could treat an illness, Duan Shun Jie suspiciously looked at him.

Xuan Yuan laughed, patting his shoulder : "Please! Don't use such a suspicious eyes to look at me, can you? Whether or not the best doctor in the world, I dare not say. But compare to the ordinary doctor, I am slightly better."

"You better not mess up...." Duan Shun Jie still felt anxious.

"Su'r is my daughter, how could I mess up." Xuan Yuan shot him a sideways glance, obviously extremely displeased at his disbelief.

"Heaven knows! Don't you still have a son and a daughter at Tong'an..... " Duan Shun Jie gradually lowered his voice. Mentioning Xuan Yuan's wives, son and daughter had always caused him had an unlimited sense of guilt. But he truthfully unwilling to let go the happiness in his hand, even if for this he brought unhappiness for others, he still unwilling to let go.

"Don't worry! Have you had your dinner? I accompany you to eat." Xuan Yuan's manner seemed like he didn't mind at all. Ordering the servant to prepare the dinner, then he pulled Duan Shun Jie to sit down.

The two hastily finished their dinner, the medicine also already decocted. After fed Su'r to drink the medicine, within an hour the fever was decreasing. Seeing her still pale with unhealthy color cheeks, Duan Shun Jie insisted to stay in her room to accompany her. Xuan Yuan couldn't persuade him, might as well followed forth to stay.

In the middle of the night, the unable to sleep Duan Shun Jie stealthily got up to check on Su'r's condition. Seeing her face already had the slight flushed red color, the breathing also smooth and steady, until then he finally believed that Xuan Yuan's self-proclaimed as an excellent doctor was not just a boast.

Walking to side of the sleeping with complete clothes Xuan Yuan, looking at the man who seemingly didn't have anything he couldn't do, that sense of unreal yet distinctly existed. Unable to believe that he already lived together with him, also didn't dare to believe that they could just continue to stay together. However, no matter what kind of

ending they would have, to possess the genuine moment of accompanying each other, near to each other, he himself was without any regrets, regardless.

Xuan Yuan's eyelashes lightly fluttered for several times, slowly but surely, the eyes opened. In the abyss of the night, his pupils were remarkably bright. Reflected on Duan Shun Jie's face, immediately made his heart moved a spell. No matter how long had it been, Duan Shun Jie had always felt that he seemingly couldn't get used to this man.

"What's wrong? Can't sleep?" Xuan Yuan subtly smiled while propping his body to sit. Gently made a yawn --- Good Heaven! Why there was a person even when yawning still could appear so elegant.

"Not really." Walking to stand on the window side, Duan Shun Jie pretended to look at the scenery to hide his reddening face and palpitating heart. Inwardly cursed his own self for being so embarrassing.

Xuan Yuan also walked to his side, with him shoulder to shoulder stood in front of the window. The cold wind of a mountain in the deep night had dispersed away the summer heat. The vast sky was full of twinkling stars, the reflection was inverted on the not faraway pond water's surface, there was a kind of beauty which made one couldn't divide whether this was heaven or mortal world, and forgot about the passage of time.

"Thinking about what?" If Feng Zong could have the chance to see Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng at this moment, certainly couldn't believe that he could reveal such expression. The previous Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng, inside and outside was of sharp sword, showing off his ability ; the presently Xuan Yuan, though the bearing not deteriorated one bit, yet the poise indeed sent out a calm and peaceful air.

"Thinking....." Always bewitched by Xuan Yuan until muddle-headed, Duan Shun Jie himself wanted to severely scold himself for a moment, "Thinking about..... the me from before, no matter how would unable to believe that I can be with you like this, standing together shoulder to shoulder, like this calmly and peacefully talking, like this....."

"Fool!" Xuan Yuan was burst out in laughter at once, completely disrupted the atmosphere, "At the beginning you didn't have the sense of reality is fine, but now Su'r almost on her first birthday, you still whole face wearing the admist the clouds and mist expression, isn't it too stupid!"

"Because I just can't believe!" Duan Shun Jie was a little bit annoyed, just like this with Xuan Yuan having an ordinary husband and wife like life was honestly caused him to greatly couldn't have the sense of reality. No matter how, he still felt that his blessings were being too excessive, "I just can't believe that you would... you would....."

"Can't believe I would what?" Xuan Yuan blinked his eyes, whole face was of an innocent face.

"Can't believe that you you would like me." Duan Shun Jie's voice became even lower as he spoke, in the end it was nearly inaudible.

Xuan Yuan laughed for a while, seemingly didn't intend with Duan Shun Jie to discuss about this matter. Instead, his fingers were pointed at the vast boundless starry sky outside the window : "Shun Jie, look. So many stars."

Duan Shun Jie lifted his head, he saw the dark blue color of the night sky was embeded with innumerable spark, gazing at it caused one's heart unexpectedly widely opened.

"I, since childhood only felt that a man in this world should vie for supremacy, in order to leave one's name in historical record. In Xuan Yuan Imperial Family for more than twenty years, also because of this purpose I went on expedition everywhere. Wouldn't be willing to take it easy even a little." Xuan Yuan softly recounted, the tone was of the utmost earnesty. "But you see, facing the vast boundless sky, even if your property and merit is magnificent to the point of occupying half volume of historical records, it is nothing more than several tens of pages on the paper. If because of this used up the whole of life, in the very end, after all, would only regret one's past deeds*. Though I

was born in an Imperial Family, everyone around me were pursuing that highest submit supreme Royal Crown, yet, my own eyes saw that those officials who possessed the top position didn't live happily, at least not as happy as I am now...."

(t/n : * to regret one's past deeds (id) : regret having done something.)

Xuan Yuan subtly laughed out, then resumed : "Since it is like this, why should I insist on it. Just said that the supremacy of power and influence is already within the reach, but if wanted me to helplessly see you died in front of me, I would rather abandon that kind of opportunity...."

He spoke in a pleasant and captivating manner. Duan Shun Jie upon hearing this, his heart was incomparably moved. Just wanted to open his mouth, by the side, Su'r who was woken up by the noise of the two's conversation, wailing out loud.

Duan Shun Jie had no choice, with his fastest steps he ran and hold the baby in swaddling clothes, gently coaxed her. Xuan Yuan also followed forth, moved proficiently to examine Su'r's condition.

"It seems like she has wetted herself....." Xuan Yuan's voice was revealing a stream of helplessness and hopelessness. For this man who always felt that under the heaven nothing could trouble him, changing the diaper could be said as his only one difficulty on this earth.

A little bit amused while helping Su'r changed her diaper, gazing at by the side concentrating his attention to see how Xuan Yuan, Duan Shun Jie felt that his chest suddenly gushed with a kind of gentle, tender, warm feeling. Gently extended his hand to firmly hold on Xuan Yuan's hand, he felt that his eyes, at that moment, became hot.....

"Fool!" Xuan Yuan subtly laughed, leisurely closing in his body, passionately printed a kiss on Duan Shun Jie's lips.

"Waa....Waaa....." Su'r who was in Duan Shun Jie's bosom seemingly unable to bear being squeezed, unexpectedly let out a loud wailing.

"Go to hell....."

Hearing Xuan Yuan cursed in low voice, Duan Shun Jie suddenly could no longer restrain his laughter, laughing out loud.....

The many heart-breaking things, the greatest extent has been entrusted to the flowing water. Do not linger in pain and sorrow, just be brave and stay in love, happiness will come at last.

End of Fallen Hero Epilogue.

End Of Fallen Hero.

Alright. It's a WRAP!!! Yahoooooo.... XD
We did it guys.... *dancing happily*

As I had said in the beginning of this project, there is actually an extra chapter, but it has nothing to do with main story.

summary of the extra :

It is more like the 'behind the scene' kind of story. It is like the author and the editor were discussing about how they should decide on the story with a homosexual as the theme. and so, they two, while discussing, also involved into a love story themselves. in short, the extra was a short story about the making of Fallen Hero. actually it is kinda interesting, but such a PITA to translate, so me NO WANT to translate the extra.

and everyone.....

You can leave the ride as this rollercoaster ride has reached its destination. Please pay the fee before you get off of the ride. XD

Thank you very much for riding with me in this ride.

I hope you all have a good time with Duan Shun Jie and Xuan Yuan Xi Cheng. Wehehehehe..... XD